

A  
COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH, ITALIAN, SPANISH, AND PORTUGUESE LANGUAGES.

By EDWIN A. NOTLEY.

---

This Work, in a Tabular form, much facilitates the acquirement of any one of these Languages,  
and for the study of two or more, the advantage is still greater.

---

*A COPIOUS VOCABULARY, ALPHABETICALLY ARRANGED, IS APPENDED.*

LONDON:  
TRÜBNER & CO., 60 PATERNOSTER ROW.  
1868.

EDINBURGH : PRINTED BY BALLANTYNE AND COMPANY, PAUL'S WORK.

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE		PAGE
PREFACE, . . . . .	v	SUBSTANTIVES—	
ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION, . . . . .	xi	Formation of the Plural, . . . . .	20
ARTICLES—		Of the Gender, . . . . .	26
Definite Article Declined, . . . . .	2	Augmentatives . . . . .	32
Indefinite Article Declined, . . . . .	4	Diminutives, . . . . .	32
Agreement with Noun, . . . . .	6	Compound Substantives, . . . . .	34
In a General Sense, . . . . .	6	Plural of Compound Substantives, . . . . .	34
In a Particular Sense, . . . . .	8	ADJECTIVES—	
In a Partitive Sense, . . . . .	8	Formation of the Feminine, . . . . .	38
Before Countries, &c., . . . . .	10	Formation of the Plural, . . . . .	40
Before Nouns of Weight, &c., . . . . .	12	Degrees of Comparison, . . . . .	42
Before Names of Deities, Titles, &c., . . . . .	14	Comparative of Superiority, . . . . .	42
Before Names of Celebrities, . . . . .	14	Comparative of Inferiority, . . . . .	44
Before Numeral Adjectives, . . . . .	16	Comparative of Equality, . . . . .	46
Before Two or more Adjectives, . . . . .	16	The Superlative Degree, . . . . .	46
Before Possessive Pronouns, . . . . .	18	Numeral Adjectives, . . . . .	50
With Adverbs of Quantity, . . . . .	18	Days of the Month, . . . . .	58
With an Exclamation, . . . . .	20	“All” with Numeral, . . . . .	60
		The Hour, &c., . . . . .	60

ADJECTIVES, <i>continued</i> —	PAGE	VERBS, <i>continued</i> —	PAGE
Of Age, . . . . .	62	Participle Past, . . . . .	256
Once, Twice, &c., . . . . .	62	" with Verb <i>To be</i> , . . . . .	256
Concord with the Noun, . . . . .	64	" with Verb <i>To have</i> , . . . . .	258
Place of Adjectives, . . . . .	66	" with Pronominal Verbs, . . . . .	262
Adjectives of Dimension, . . . . .	70	" with Unpersonal Verbs, . . . . .	262
PRONOUNS—		" with Infinitive, . . . . .	264
Table of Personal Pronouns, . . . . .	72	Passive Verb, . . . . .	266
Nominative Case, . . . . .	78	Neuter Verb, . . . . .	268
Accusative Case, . . . . .	84	Reflective Verb, . . . . .	270
Dative Case, . . . . .	86	Unpersonal, or Impersonal Verbs, . . . . .	270
With the Infinitive Mood, . . . . .	88	Negative form of Conjugation, . . . . .	272
With the Imperative Mood, . . . . .	90	Interrogative form of Conjugation, . . . . .	274
It, They, Them, . . . . .	94	Agreement of the Verb with its Subject, . . . . .	276
Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive, . . . . .	100	Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity, . . . . .	280
Possessive Pronouns Disjunctive, . . . . .	108	ADVERBS—	
Demonstrative Pronouns, . . . . .	112	Of Time, . . . . .	284
Relative Pronouns, . . . . .	120	Of Place, . . . . .	286
Indefinite Pronouns, . . . . .	132	Of Order, . . . . .	288
VERBS—		Of Quality and Comparison, . . . . .	290
Conjugation of "To Have," . . . . .	150	Of Doubt, . . . . .	292
" "To Be," . . . . .	164	Of Affirmation and Negation, . . . . .	292
" Regular Verbs, . . . . .	178	Formation from Adjectives, . . . . .	294
" Irregular Verbs, . . . . .	186	Place of the Adverb, . . . . .	296
Moods and Tenses, . . . . .	236	Affirmative, . . . . .	296
Indicative Present, . . . . .	236	Negatives, . . . . .	296
Imperfect and Preterite Definite, . . . . .	236	Observations on various Adverbs, . . . . .	300
Preterite Indefinite, . . . . .	240	PREPOSITIONS—	
Future Tense, . . . . .	240	Remarks on various Prepositions, . . . . .	310
Conditional Mood, . . . . .	244	Place of the Preposition, . . . . .	312
Imperative Mood, . . . . .	244	Repetition, . . . . .	314
Subjunctive Mood, . . . . .	246	CONJUNCTIONS, . . . . .	316
Infinitive Mood, . . . . .	252	VOCABULARY, . . . . .	321
Participle Present, . . . . .	254		

## P R E F A C E.

---

THIS work, though on a less comprehensive scale, was commenced some years past, solely for the purpose of the author's enlarging his own acquaintance with two of the languages treated, and of his acquiring the other two more easily by comparison—all the four having been of real utility, if not of absolute necessity, in his avocations, not only in the countries where the languages are spoken, but also in England. The course of instruction now imparted to others is, therefore, purely of a practical nature, based upon long personal experience, and adopted in preference to many of the systems which are advocated on the study of foreign languages. Far from wishing to pass invidious remarks upon other grammars, or presumptuously to assert any superiority in this, the author must be allowed to state the plan pursued by him, and wherein he differs from others, leaving the master or pupil to select the method most in accordance with his own opinion. In the first place, grammar, as an abstract science, is not here taught. Philological technicalities and remarks upon the origin of words, however interesting to some few, are suppressed, the main object being not to swell a volume, but to give only that which is really necessary. It must not be considered an imperfection to have departed from the generally-adopted method of having a separate portion

of the grammar devoted to *Syntax*, which plan invariably necessitates the repetition of rules already given in some other methodical division of the work, and cannot be of any real practical use; for, as “syntax” (to quote one author) “is a convenient disposition of the different parts of speech among themselves,”—meaning, though obscurely, the right construction of a sentence,—why separate the rules which govern that disposition from observations on any other peculiarities in the part of speech, such as the variations of form on account of gender or number?

It is also deemed unnecessary to define the names of the different parts of speech, such as what a relative pronoun is, and why it is so called: the rules and examples will at once show all this.

The real, and, without doubt, the most useful object aimed at, is to indicate the principal features in the *grammatical construction of the French, Italian, Spanish, and Portuguese languages*: this is endeavoured to be explained by a collection of all the most necessary rules, each one illustrated by an example or examples taken from classic writings, from newspapers, and from any modern literature showing the prevailing phraseology, and all translated into English. As French is the most universally known, its rules are placed in the first column, and those of the other languages are compared with it and with one another; so that, whatever language may be under study, the rule in the French division should be first read. Where it differs from the others is shown in the parallel columns.

In this manner a knowledge of more than one language can be acquired at the same time, while the real principles of grammar are more easily comprehended, for they are the same in all tongues, although different idioms exist, and these are learned only by actual practice.

Every language abounds in idioms, a mere fraction of which could fill a volume, yet grammars devote

some pages to formal lists which a student would as soon think of committing to memory as he would attempt to remember all the proverbs of Sancho Panza. It is a great mistake to suppose that a mere grammar is sufficient to teach a pupil to speak and write a foreign language unaided by his own efforts and by those of his tutor, and that the publishing a quantity of idiomatical expressions adds value to a work of this description. Long lists of exceptions and irregularities are next to useless, such as in verbs, of which the Spanish language alone contains upwards of *five hundred*; also of participles. A good dictionary, which is indispensable, contains this and other information which is often unnecessarily inserted in a grammar. Nevertheless, as it has been observed that the more common or necessary may be the use of a verb, the more it is subject to irregularity of inflection; and that, consequently, verbs which are irregular in one language are, for the most part, irregular in others of like derivation, several are here conjugated and arranged alphabetically as regards the English equivalent. On adverbs, (and the same observation might apply to prepositions,) Corticelli remarks: "Molti sono gli avverbj, e più che molti i modi avverbiali della lingua toscana, nè sarebbe senza noja l'annoverargli qui." Still, for the sake of those who are studying more than one of the four languages, a table is given of one hundred adverbs properly classified, and each classification in alphabetical order as regards the English word.

Interjections are not alluded to: they are *too soon* learned without the aid of a preceptor.

As an important, if not the first necessary step in the acquirement of language, is naturally an acquaintance with the names of objects, a copious vocabulary is appended. It consists of about two thousand five hundred words in most common use in each language. The student is recommended to learn them by degrees, giving to the task if only a quarter of an hour every day. It will assist him in his

reading, which, under the guidance of a grammar, and with the assistance of a good dictionary, is by far the most successful, if not the only means of becoming familiar with the idioms of languages. One cannot read too much, especially works containing colloquial phraseology, such as dramatic writings. Newspapers are also great aids, not only because they are, as a rule, correctly written, but because they necessarily adopt expressions in constant use. This cannot be said of poetry, which luxury is too frequently placed in the hands of pupils before they are enabled to spell out an ordinary sentence in prose. The time that is sometimes employed in construing one canto of Dante or of Camões would almost suffice for any intelligent learner to translate the whole of *Gil Blas*, or the greater part of Goldoni's plays. It has already been hinted that this publication does not pretend to give a complete analysis or a thorough enumeration of all the difficulties which present themselves in the acquirement of a foreign language, but it professes to give rather more than a general outline of study; and the author may be permitted to assert that a knowledge of its contents will give to the learner no mean insight into the construction of the four southern languages. During the time that it has been in preparation and compilation—for, after all, a great part of any grammar must be mere compilation, (you cannot alter the conjugation of the verb *Parler*, to speak, nor the meaning of the numeral adjective *Tre*, three.)—it has been observed that professors are teaching one foreign language with the assistance of another, thus practically realising the idea of this work, and adding testimony to the utility of a comparative grammar.

Much care and labour have been bestowed in the endeavour to lessen difficulties which are usually found in comprehending clearly the following points:—The right employment of personal pronouns in the nominative, dative, and accusative cases; the distinct use of the imperfect and preterite tenses indicative;



the peculiarities of the subjunctive mood, especially in the Spanish and Portuguese languages; and the variation of the past participle. These parts of grammar are all capable of being subjected to fixed rules, which cannot be said of the capricious government of prepositions, and of a few other obstacles which are overcome only by reading. Although some few of the rules given do not appear in other books, (for they are formed on the examples themselves,) the greater part are recognised by the following undoubted authorities:—

In the French division, by the “Grammaire Nationale” of Bescherelle frères, (than which, perhaps, a better grammar does not exist in any tongue;) by the “Grammaire des Grammaires,” and others.

In the Italian, by Corticelli, Buommatei, Cicilioni, and Lemmi.

In the Spanish, by the Grammar of the Academy, by F. T. A. Chalumeau de Verneuil, Emanuel del Mar, and others.

Of the Portuguese language there is a very poor collection of grammars. The best that has come under the notice of the author is by F. S. Constancio, written in French, and published in Paris 1849. Although not sufficiently modern, it is well worth the study of those who might desire to compare Portuguese with its Latin origin. Vieyra's appears to be the favourite, in fact, almost the only one generally known; but it has several inaccuracies, some of which are noticed by John Laycock, whose grammar, published in Leeds 1825, is also rather behind the age, for Portuguese has lately undergone some changes which will be remarked upon in the course of this work. There is also a grammar by Mr D'Orsey, published 1860. It possesses some useful notes on the modern style of writing, has plenty of exercises, and is a slight improvement upon Ollendorff. It may be here observed that Portuguese is not

sufficiently studied, in spite of its increasing utility, not so much in respect to literature, but in commercial pursuits. In the immense and flourishing empire of Brazil, where so many of our countrymen are located, it is singular, and at the same time humiliating, to remark how few ever apply themselves to learning the language with any degree of correctness. They appear to rest satisfied with acquiring the kitchen jargon of their nigger servants, learning it in the same manner as it is imparted to a parrot, a courier, or a Levantine barber—that is, by oral instruction only, and in just sufficient quantity to make their wants known. There are, of course, some exceptions, and these experience the value of understanding the construction of the Portuguese language.

The examples which illustrate the rules in this book are mostly from La Bruyère, Bossuet, Lamartine, Napoléon, Boccaccio, Goldoni, Manzoni, Cervantes, La Sage, Urraca, Corticelli, Constancio, Guerini, and others, besides public journals.

Whatever deficiencies may be found here, the author hopes that this small addition to the many educational works daily appearing will at least afford some assistance in the study of modern languages.

## ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION.

It must be admitted that without the aid of *oral* instruction, a correct idea of pronunciation cannot be gained. No one by *writing* can teach the nasal sounds of the French *n* and the Portuguese *ão*, the open and close sounds of the Italian *e* and *o*, or the guttural of the Spanish *g* and *j*. Nevertheless, some assistance can be given to the pupil who is obliged to dispense with a master, or who is unable to go where the language is spoken.

It is necessary to explain that in the table of alphabets, the letters which would occupy the blank spaces are pronounced in the same manner as those in the French column, where the equivalent sound is given in English. For instance, *A* in all the languages is sounded like *ah*, or like *a* in *arm*. Where a dash is made, the letter does not exist.

### TABLE OF ALPHABETS.

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
A	ah.			
B	bay.		The Spanish B and V have almost the same sound.	
C	say.	tchay.	thay, (as in <i>thane</i> .)	say.
D	day.			
E	a.			
F	effe.			
G	jay, ( <i>j</i> soft, like <i>s</i> in <i>measure</i> .)	jay, ( <i>j</i> hard.)	hay, ( <i>h</i> guttural.)	jay, (as in French.)
H	ash.	ahkah.	arch.	agga.
I	e.			
J	jee, ( <i>j</i> soft.)	ee.	hota, ( <i>h</i> guttural.)	jod, ( <i>j</i> soft as in French.)
K	car.	—		—
L	elle.			
M	emme.			
N	enne.			
O	o.			
P	pay			
Q	ku	coo.	coo.	kay.
R	erre.			
S	esse.			
T	tay.			
U	u, (a sound between <i>oo</i> and <i>you</i> .)	oo.	oo.	oo.
V	vay.		vay, (see letter B.)	
W	—	—	—	—
X	eeks.	—	akis.	shiz.
Y	egrec.	—	eegriega, (pronounced <i>e</i> , like the letter <i>i</i> .)	ipsilon, (pronounced <i>e</i> , like the letter <i>i</i> .)
Z	zaid	dzata	thata, (like <i>tha</i> in <i>thane</i> .)	zay.

## PRONUNCIATION.

## FRENCH.

The Vowels are all pronounced as shown in the Alphabet: *Example*.—*dé* (a thimble or die) is like the English *da* in the word *date*. } Same.

The Consonants are pronounced as in English, with certain exceptions noted in following observations:— } Same.

*C* before *a, o, u*, is, when marked with the Cedilla (*s*,) sounded like *s*; as, *ça* (here) is pronounced like *sar* in the word *sardine*.

*Ch* are sounded like *sh*; as, *chat* (a cat) is pronounced like *shar* in the English word *sharp* (Note *a*.)

*Ge* and *gi* have scarcely an equivalent sound in English; they are pronounced in French very like *s* in the English word *measure*.

*H* in French is sometimes aspirated, as in English, sometimes silent. } *H* in Italian is silent.

*J* is like *g* in French, before *e* or *i*; *ju* in *injure* (an injury) have almost the same sound as *su* in the English word *measure*.

Note *a*.—The letter *t* in French is not sounded at the end of a word, except sometimes, for the sake of euphony, before another word beginning with a vowel.

Note *b*.—There is no letter *k* in the Italian language, the hard *c* and *ch* supplying its place.

## ITALIAN.

*C* before *e* and *i* sounds like *ch* in *chest* and in *chin*.  
*Sc* in Italian are pronounced like *sha* in *shape*, and *sci* like *she*.

*Ch* in Italian are sounded like *k*, or *ca* hard; as, *cheto* (quiet) is pronounced like the word *Cato* (Note *b*.)

*Ge* and *gi* in Italian have the soft sound of the English *g* in *gem* and *gipsy*.

*Gue* and *gui* sound like *gway*, *gwee*.

*Gua* are sounded like *gwar* or *goo-ah*; as *guardia*, (a guard) is pronounced like *goo-ah-deer*.

*J* at the beginning or in the middle of a word is pronounced like *e* in English; as *je*, of *jeri*, (yesterday,) sounds like *e-a* spoken briskly; at the end of a word it is pronounced like *ee*.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

<p>} Same.</p>	<p>} Same.</p>
<p>} Same (Note a.)</p>	<p>} Same (Note b.)</p>
<p><i>C</i> before <i>e</i> and <i>i</i> sounds like <i>th</i> in <i>thane</i> and <i>thick</i>.  <i>Ch</i>, considered by Spanish grammarians as one distinct letter, have the sound of <i>ch</i> in <i>chest</i>; as, <i>chal</i> (a shawl) is pronounced like <i>charl</i> in <i>Charles</i>.</p>	<p><i>C</i> before <i>a</i>, <i>o</i>, <i>u</i>, is sounded (as in French) like <i>s</i> when the former is marked with the Cedilla, (<i>ç</i>); as, <i>caça</i> (chase) is pronounced like <i>kah-sah</i>.  <i>Ch</i> are sounded (as in French) like <i>sh</i>; as, <i>charpa</i> (a scarf) is pronounced like <i>sharper</i>.</p>
<p><i>Ge</i> and <i>gi</i> in Spanish have the guttural sound of <i>h</i>:  no equivalent in English.</p>	<p>} Same as French.</p>
<p>} Same.</p>	<p>} Same.</p>
<p>} Same.</p>	<p>} Same.</p>
<p>} <i>J</i> in Spanish is always guttural</p>	<p>} Like <i>j</i> in French.</p>
<p>} <i>Ñ</i>, (see general remark below.)</p>	

Note a.—The *B* and *V* in Spanish have almost the same sound, and are sometimes written one for the other, according to taste, except before the letters *l* and *r*, or at the end of a word or syllable, when *b* must always be used. *S* always has the sound of *s* in the English word *send*.

Note b.—*M* and *N* at the beginning of a word or syllable are sounded as in English; otherwise they have a nasal sound, except when the letter *n* is followed by *h* in the same word, when it resembles the *gn* in French.

## PRONUNCIATION.

## FRENCH.

## ITALIAN.

*Qu* are pronounced like *k*.

{ *Qu* in Italian sounds like *kw*; as *quà* (here) is pronounced like *kwar*.

*X* sounds like *ks*, as in English.

{ Same as French.

*Z* as in English.

{ *Z* as in English, but with a hard or soft sound, which cannot be taught by rule.

*General Remarks.*—The liquid sound of *l* in French corresponds with the *gli* of Italian, (Note *a*.) the *ll* of the Spanish, and the *lh* of the Portuguese, all which are pronounced like *gl* in *seraglio*.

Note *a*.—In the Italian word *negligere*, and a few others, the *g* is sounded hard.

## PRONUNCIATION.

### SPANISH.

- { *Qu*, same as French.
- { Same as French.
- { *Z* in Spanish is sounded like *th* in *thane*.

### PORTUGUESE.

- { *Qu* sound like *k*, except in a few words, such as *quando*, *frequente*, &c., which are pronounced *kwando*, *frequente*, &c.
- { *X* is pronounced like *sh*, except when followed by a consonant, and in a few words, such as *proximo*: in these instances it is pronounced like *ss*.
- { *Z* as in English.

The *gn* in the French word *seigneur* corresponds with the Italian *gn*, the Spanish *ñ*, and the Portuguese *nh*; as, *señor* and *senhor* are pronounced like *senyore*.





---

COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR.

---

A general table is given, showing the manner in which this part of speech is declined. Particular attention should be paid to the Italian method, which varies more than that of the others, for the purpose of perfecting the euphony of the language. Several rules which follow will show that the article is often used by foreigners where it is not expressed in English, and the contrary; also, that where sometimes in English the *indefinite* article is employed, French and others make use of the *definite*. It is not practicable to place together all the

### Definite Article.

#### FRENCH.

*Le*, the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.

*La* before a noun, fem. do. do. do.

*L'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.

*Les* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

*Du*, of or from the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.

*de la* before a noun, fem. do. do.

*de l'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.

*des* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

Note *a*.—This *s* is called by the Italians “*s impura*.” Corticelli says that *lo* should also be used after the preposition *per*, as *per lo* quale. *Il* is sometimes, though not often, found before *z*.

#### ITALIAN.

*Il* before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant.

*La* before a noun, fem. sing., do. do.

*L'* before a vowel or before *e* in the plural.

*Lo* before *s* followed by another consonant (Note *a*), or before *z*.

*I* before a noun, masc. plural, beginning with a consonant.

*Le* before a noun, fem. pl. do. do.

*Gli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *gl'*) or with *s impura* or *z*.

*Del* before a noun, masc. sing.

*della* before a noun, fem. sing.

*dello* before *s impura* or *z*.

*dei* before a noun, masc. pl., beginning with a consonant.

rules where the article ought to be used, or where it may be suppressed, because they vary in the different languages compared.

It must be observed that the article likewise performs the part of a pronoun, in which capacity it is hereafter mentioned.

### Definite Article.

#### SPANISH.

*El*, the, before a noun, masc. sing.

*La* before a noun, fem. sing.

*Lo*, neutral, (for instance, before an adjective used as a substantive.)

*Los* before nouns, masc. plural.

*Las* before nouns, fem. plural.

#### PORTUGUESE.

*o* before a noun, masc. sing.

*a* before a noun, fem. sing.

*os* before a noun, masc. pl.

*as* before a noun, fem. pl.

*Del*, of or from the, before a noun, masc. sing.

*de la* before a noun, fem. sing.

*de lo*, neutral.

*de los* before a noun, masc. pl.

*de las* before a noun, fem. pl.

*Do* before a noun, masc. sing.

*da* before a noun, fem. sing.

*dos* before a noun, masc. pl.

*das* before a noun, fem. pl.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

- Au*, to or at the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.  
*à la* before a noun, fem. sing. do. do.  
*à l'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.  
*aux* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

- Un*, a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*une* before a noun, fem.

- à un*, to or at a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*à une* before a noun, fem.

## ITALIAN.

- delle* before a noun, fem. pl., beginning with a consonant.  
*degli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *degl'*) or with *s impura* or *z*.  
*al* before a noun, masc. sing.  
*alla* before a noun, fem. sing.  
*allo* before *s impura* or *z*.  
*ai* before a noun, masc. pl., beginning with a consonant.  
*alle* before a noun, fem. pl., do. do.  
*agli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *agl'*) or with *s impura* or *z*.

## Indefinite Article.

- un* before a noun, masc.  
*una* before a noun, fem.  
*un'* before a noun, fem., beginning with a vowel.  
*uno* before a noun, masc., beginning with *s impura* or *z*.

- a un* (or *ad un*) (Note *a*) before a noun, masc.  
*a una* (or *ad una*) before a noun, fem.  
*a uno* (or *ad uno*) before a noun, masc., beginning with *s impura* or *z*.

Note *a*.—The preposition *a* may add *d* before a vowel, for the sake of euphony.

## SPANISH.

*al*, to or at the, before a noun, masc. sing.  
*à la* before a noun, fem. sing.  
*à los* before a noun, masc. pl.  
*à las* before a noun, fem. pl.

*un* or *uno*, a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*una* before a noun, fem.

*d un*, to or at a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*d una* before a noun, fem.

## PORTUGUESE.

*ao* before a noun, masc. sing.  
*á* (Note *a*) before a noun, fem. sing.  
*aos* before a noun, masc. pl.  
*às* before a noun, fem. pl.

## Indefinite Article.!

*um* (Note *b*) before a noun, masc.  
*uma* before a noun, fem.

*a um* before a noun, masc.  
*a uma* before a noun, fem.

Note *a*.—Observe that *d* (accented) is a combination of the preposition *a* and the article *a*.

Note *b*.—This article is frequently written with an *h*, as *hum*, *huma*, but not in accordance with modern usage.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

*d'un*, of or from a or an, before a noun, masc.

*d'une* before a noun, fem.

## ITALIAN.

*di un* before a noun, masc.

*di una* before a noun, fem.

*di uno* before a noun, masc., beginning with *s impura*  
or *z*.

## Agreement with Noun.

1. The article must always agree in gender and number with its noun. } Same.

*Examples.*

*Le garçon*           The boy.  
*Les femmes*        The women.

*Examples.*

*Il signor*           The gentleman.  
*Le signore*        The ladies.

*Remark.*—The article in French is generally repeated before every noun. } Same.

## In a General Sense.

2. The article is used before all nouns taken in a general sense, before the names of arts, virtues, vices, metals, &c. } Same.

*Examples.*

*L'homme* est mortel.    Man is mortal.  
*Le fer* est util.        Iron is useful.  
*La vertu* est louable.   Virtue is laudable.

*Examples.*

*Gli uomini* sono mortali.   Men are mortal.  
*Il ferro* è utile.        Iron is useful.  
*La virtù* è lodevole.     Virtue is laudable.

## ARTICLES.

### SPANISH.

*de un*, of or from *a* or *an*, before a noun, masc.  
*de una* before a noun, fem.

### PORTUGUESE.

*de um* before a noun, masc.  
*de uma* before a noun, fem.

### Agreement with Noun.

} Same.

} Same.

#### Examples.

*El hombre*

The man.

*Las mugeres*

The women.

#### Examples.

*o homem*

The man.

*as mulheres*

The women.

In Spanish, a repetition is only necessary for the purpose of avoiding obscurity. } Same.

### In a General Sense.

} Same.

} Same.

#### Examples.

*Los hombres son mortales.*

Men are mortal.

*El hierro es util.*

Iron is useful.

*La industria y la diligencia son hijas de la esperanza.*

Industry and diligence are the offspring of hope.

#### Examples.

*O homem é mortal.*

Man is mortal.

*O ferro é util.*

Iron is useful.

*A caridade bem ordenada começa por nós mesmos.*

Charity begins at home.

## In a Particular Sense.

## FRENCH.

3. A Noun denoting some particular object takes the article. } Same.

*Example.*

*L'homme qui vient de sortir.*  
The man who has just gone out.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

*Ecco la strada.*  
Here is the street.

## In a Partitive Sense.

4. Substantives in a partitive sense, denoted in English by "some" or "any," expressed or understood, are preceded in French by the article with the preposition *de*.

*Examples.*

Donnez-moi *du* pain.  
Give me some bread.  
A-t-il *de la* viande ?  
Has he any meat ?

In Italian, when a portion of what is mentioned is meant, the article and preposition are used, but not where no idea of quantity is given (Note *a*.)

*Examples.*

Datemi *del* pane.  
Give me some bread.  
Non vogliamo pane.  
We want no bread.

Note *a*.—Buonmatei writes:—"Noi diciamo *bere vino, bere il vino, e bere del vino*: e il primo significa non astenersi del vino, il secondo bere tutto il vino di cui si tratta, e il terzo bere qualche quantità di vino," (the first signifies, not abstaining from wine; the second, drinking all the wine of which mention is made; and the third, drinking some quantity of wine.)



## ARTICLES.

9

### In a Particular Sense.

SPANISH.

} Same.

*Example.*

Contamos con marchar *la* semana proxima.  
We think of going next week.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Example.*

O tribunal *do* thesouro nacional.  
The tribunal of the national treasury.

### In a Partitive Sense.

In Spanish, a noun, in a partitive sense, does not } Same.  
require the article.

*Examples.*

Deme Vmd. carne.  
Give me some meat.  
¿ Quiere Vmd. dinero ?  
Do you want any money ?

*Examples.*

V. quer presunto ?  
Will you have some ham ?  
Aqui estão ovos.  
Here are some eggs.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Countries, &amp;c.

## FRENCH.

5. The article is most frequently used before countries, provinces, and kingdoms, but this cannot be laid down as a rule, the exceptions being too numerous. The names of rivers are always preceded by the article, also several islands.

The names of cities and towns do not take the article, except *le Caire* and a few others.

*Examples.*

Les nations de l'Europe.

The nations of Europe.

Les guerres de la Russie.

The wars of Russia.

La carte de Paris.

The map of Paris.

6. When the preposition *in* or *from* precedes the name of a country, no article is required (Note *a.*) } Same.

*Examples.*

Demeurer *en* France.

To live *in* France.

Il vient *de* France.

He comes *from* France.

## ITALIAN.

The article is used when the whole of a country, province, &c., is meant; but many islands reject the article.

*Examples.*

*La* Russia è un paese vasto.

Russia is a vast country.

*La* Corsica is said; but Malta, Cipro, and a few others are without the article.

*Examples.*

Ella è *in* Francia.

She is *in* France.

Vengo *d'*Inghilterra.

I come *from* England.

Note *a.*—Before the names of the great divisions of the world, the French use the definite article: as,  
Je viens de l'Amérique. I come from America.

## Before Countries, &amp;c.

## SPANISH.

} Same as French.

*Examples.*

Los rios de *la* Russia.  
The rivers of Russia.  
Los viajes á *la* China.  
The voyages to China.  
Mi viaje á Canton.  
My voyage to Canton.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Viven *en* Francia.  
They live in France.  
Viene *de* Francia.  
He comes from France.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese, rivers, provinces, and mountains always take the article; as *o* Ganges, *o* Himalaya, and most islands, as *a* Madeira; also the names of nearly all empires and kingdoms: as *a* Russia, *a* Italia: but Inglaterra, França, Hespanha, and Portugal may be used both with and without the article. Cities and towns do not take the article, except *o* Cairo, *o* Porto, and a few others.

In Portuguese, the article should be used or not, in accordance with preceding rule.

*Examples.*

*Em* Londres; *no* Porto.  
In London; in Oporto.  
*Vem de* França; *vem da* Bahia.  
He comes from France; he comes from Bahia.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

7. When the names of countries are employed *adjectively*, the article is not required. } Same.

*Examples.*

Roi d'Espagne.  
King of Spain.  
Vin de Bordeaux.  
Bordeaux wine.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Il re di Spagna.  
The king of Spain.  
Vino di Francia.  
French wine.

## Before Nouns of Weight, &amp;c.

8. The French use the *definite* article before nouns of weight, number, measure, &c., where in English the *indefinite* article can be employed. } Same.

*Examples.*

Un schelling *la* livre.  
A shilling a pound.  
Deux schellings *le* cent.  
Two shillings a hundred.

*Example.*

Lo zucchero costa sei soldi *la* libbra.  
Sugar costs sixpence a pound.

9. In expressing time, the French use the preposition *par*.

*Example.*

Tant *par* mois.  
So much a month.

The preposition *a* and the article are used in Italian.

*Example.*

Una lira *al* giorno.  
A pound a day.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

El re de España.  
The king of Spain.  
Vino de Francia.  
French wine.

## PORTUGUESE.

} The article still accords with preceding rule.

*Examples.*

O Imperador do Brazil.  
The emperor of Brazil.  
A gazeta de Londres.  
The London journal.

## Before Nouns of Weight, &amp;c.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Seis duros *la* libra.  
Six dollars a pound.  
Dos chelines *el* ciento.  
Two shillings a hundred.

} Same.

*Example.*

Lenços de cambraia a \$3 *a* duzia.  
Cambric handkerchiefs at three dollars a dozen.

} Same.

*Example.*

Seis libras *al* año.  
Six pounds a year.

} *por* in Portuguese.*Example.*

Tanto *por* mes.  
So much a month.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Names of Deities, Titles, &amp;c.

## FRENCH.

## ITALIAN.

10. The article is not required before the names of deities, titles, professions, &c., except in a particular sense (Note *a.*)

Same: the word "house" also dispenses with the article when signifying home or dwelling.

*Examples.**Examples.*

Dieu est tout puissant.  
 God is all-powerful.  
 Le Duc d'Orléans, prince du sang.  
 The Duke of Orleans, a prince of the blood.  
 Grammaire Espagnole à l'usage des Français.  
 A Spanish grammar for the use of the French.  
 Rue Belgrave, quartier Pimlico.  
 Belgrave Street, Pimlico.

Manzoni, novellista Italiano.  
 Manzoni, an Italian novelist.  
 Dizionario Francese.  
 A French dictionary.  
 In teatro, in casa, in piazza (Note *b.*)  
 At the theatre, at home, in the square.  
 Voi siete avvocato. You are a lawyer.  
 Firenze, bella città. Florence, a fine city.

## Before Names of Celebrities.

11. The French sometimes use the definite article before names of celebrities, such as great poets, but they may also dispense with it, the usage being a mere matter of taste.

Same.

*Example.*

*Le* Petrarque, *L'*Arioste.

*Example.*

*Il* Petrarca, *L'*Ariosto.

Note *a.*—In all these languages, when the names of deities, &c., denote a particular sense, the article is required: as,

*Le* Dieu des Chrétiens—*The* God of the Christians. Io sono *un* principe sfortunato—I am an unfortunate prince.

It will be observed in the examples that nouns of title, &c., when no name goes before, take the article.

Note *b.*—In Italian, the name of any place belonging to the public generally, such as a square, a church, a theatre, does not require the article, unless in a particular sense.

## Before Names of Deities, Titles, &amp;c.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.**Examples.*

Lope de Vega, poeta espagnol.  
 Lope de Vega, a Spanish poet.  
 El principe Alberto, consorte de la reina Victoria.  
 Prince Albert, the consort of Queen Victoria.  
 Yo soy Ingles.  
 I am an Englishman.  
 Está en casa de su padre.  
 He is in the house of his father.

Deos, typo da universal perfeição, Supremo Regulador  
 de todas as cousas creadas.  
 God, the type of universal perfection, the Supreme  
 Regulator of all created things.  
 Angelo Muniz, presidente do tribunal.  
 Angelo Muniz, president of the tribunal.  
 Eu vou para casa.  
 I am going home.

## Before Names of Celebrities.

} Same.

} Same.

*Example.**Example.*

*El* Tasso, *el* Ariosto.

*o* Tasso, *o* Camões.

## Before Numeral Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

12. No article is used before ordinal numbers when they *follow* a Substantive; nor before cardinal numbers used with a noun which does not particularise any object. } Same.

*Examples.*

George premier.  
George the first.  
Livre second.  
Book the second.  
J'ai deux frères.  
I have two brothers.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Pio nono.  
Pius the ninth.  
Libro terzo, verso quinto.  
Book the third, verse the fifth.  
Voglio tre lire.  
I want three pounds.

## Before two or more Adjectives.

13. Two or more adjectives qualifying a substantive expressed, and another understood, require the article to be repeated before each adjective. } In Italian, this may be made a general rule, but many exceptions are found.

*Example.*

*Le* premier et *le* second étage.  
The first and second floor.

*Example.*

*L'*istoria antica e *la* moderna.  
Ancient and modern history.



## Before Numeral Adjectives.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Pio nono.  
 Pius the ninth.  
 Capitulo segundo, verso cuarto.  
 Chapter the second, verse the fourth.  
 Yo tengo tres caballos.  
 I have three horses.

*Examples.*

Dom Pedro segundo.  
 Peter the second.  
 Livro terceiro, capitulo quarto.  
 Book the third, chapter the fourth.  
 Eu tenho tres irmãos.  
 I have three brothers.

## Before two or more Adjectives.

} The article may or may not be repeated in Spanish,  
 according to taste. } Same.

*Example.*

*La* historia antigua y moderna.  
 Ancient and modern history.

*Example.*

*A* historia antiga e moderna.  
 Ancient and modern history.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Possessive Pronouns.

## FRENCH.

14. Substantives preceded by possessive pronouns do not in French receive the article, thus differing from the Italian rule.

*Examples.*

*Mon frère et ma sœur viendront.*  
My brother and sister will come.  
*Toute sa vie, à ses yeux, était en avant.*  
All his life, in his own sight, was in the future.

## ITALIAN.

The possessive pronoun before a substantive takes the article in Italian, *except* before a noun of kindred or title in the *singular* number, and not preceded by an adjective.

*Examples.*

*Il mio libro ; la mia casa.*  
My book ; my house.  
*Vostro fratello.*  
Your brother.

## With Adverbs of Quantity.

15. No article, but only the preposition *de*, is used with adverbs of quantity, like *much*, *few*, *more*, &c., *except* after *bien* in the sense of *much*.

*Examples.*

*Beaucoup de science.*  
Much science.  
*Plus de solitude.*  
More solitude.  
*J'ai bien de l'argent.*  
I have much money.

In Italian, neither the article nor the preposition is used, and adverbs of quantity become adjectives.

*Examples.*

*Molto pane ; poca birra.*  
Much bread ; little beer.  
*Molti amici.*  
Many friends.  
*Non ho abbastanza tela.*  
I have not enough cloth.

## Before Possessive Pronouns.

## SPANISH.

} Same as French.

*Examples.*

Deme V. *mis* medias.  
 Give me my stockings.  
*Su* madre y hermana.  
 His mother and sister.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese, a noun preceded by a possessive pronoun may dispense with the article, but frequently takes it for the sake of emphasis or euphony.

*Examples.*

No estado actual de *seus* conhecimentos, não sabem hoje onde andam *os seus* soldados.  
 In the present state of their news they know not to-day where their (own) soldiers go.  
 Nascido em *nossos* paços, e sob *o nosso* ceo.  
 Born in our courts and under our sky.

## With Adverbs of Quantity.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Yo tengo *muchos* amigos y *pocos* enemigos.  
 I have many friends and few enemies.  
 Tiene *demasiado* dinero.  
 He has too much money.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*Pouca* chuva e muito vento.  
 Little rain and much wind.  
 Tem *demasiado* dinheiro.  
 He has too much money.  
 Tem *bastante* paciência.  
 He has enough patience.

## ARTICLES.

## With an Exclamation.

FRENCH.

16. No article is required with an exclamation where } Same.  
sometimes *a* or *an* is used in English.

*Example.*

Quel malheur !  
What *a* misfortune !

ITALIAN.

*Example.*

Che casa bella !  
What *a* beautiful house !

## SUBSTANTIVES.

It is needless, if not incorrect, to give the declension of a Substantive ; for nouns in the modern Southern languages do not vary, as in Latin, in order to form a particular case ; but their meaning is modified by the aid

FRENCH.

## Formation of the Plural.

ITALIAN.

17. The plural of French nouns, whether masculine or feminine, is formed by the addition of an *s* to the singular. Such is the general rule.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

Homme

Femme

Mouton

Œuf

Tête

Loup

a man

a woman

a sheep

an egg

a head

a wolf

PLURAL.

hommes

femmes

moutons

œufs

têtes

loups

17. Italian Substantives all end in vowels, and change for the plural as follows :—

SINGULAR.

*a* into *e*, as

Candela

*e* into *i*, as

Padre

*o* into *i*, as

Mano

candle

father

hand

PLURAL.

candele

padri

mani

*Except* the following, which are irregular :—

*Dio**uomo**re**mille**Dei**uomini**re**mila*, plural.

## ARTICLES.

### With an Exclamation.

} Same.      SPANISH.

*Example.*  
Que bella muger!  
What a beautiful woman!

} Same.      PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*  
Que cousa bonita!  
What a pretty thing!

## SUBSTANTIVES.

of the article and preposition, as shown in the table of the Article declined.

SPANISH.

### Formation of the Plural.

PORTUGUESE.

17. Spanish nouns form their plural terminations as follows:—

17. The plural of Portuguese nouns is formed as follows:—

A noun ending in a vowel (not accented) takes *s* in the plural.

A noun ending in a vowel in the singular adds an *s* to form the plural.

*Examples.*

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

Hombre  
Padre  
Cama

man  
father  
bed

PLURAL.

hombres  
padres  
camas

SINGULAR.

Quadro  
Pai  
Cousa

picture  
father  
thing

PLURAL.

quadros  
pais  
cousas

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

To the foregoing rule there are certain exceptions, as follows:—

18. Nouns ending in *al* and *ail* change these terminations into *aux*.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Cheval	horse	chevaux
Soupirail	vent-hole	soupiraux

Although some words follow the general rule of adding *s* to the singular, namely:—*Bal, Carnaval, cal, chacal, cérémonial, régat, sandal, attirail, détail, gouvernail, évantail, sérail, mail, poitrail*, and sometimes, though rarely, *travail*. *Bétail* and *bestiaux* both mean cattle, and are synonymous.

19. Nouns ending in *au* and *eu* add *x* to form the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Château	castle	châteaux
Lieu	place	lieux

*Except bleu*, which adds *s*.

20. Nouns ending in *ou* in the singular form their plural by adding an *s*, according to the general rule, *except* the words *caillou, chou, genou, hibou, pou*, which take *x* in the plural; as, *cailloux, &c.*

## ITALIAN.

18. Nouns ending in *co, ca, go, ga*, for the most part take *h* before the final vowel, in order to preserve the hard sound of the consonant.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Antico	ancient	antichi
Barca	boat	barche
Obbligo	obligation	obblighi
Lega	league	leghe

But to this rule there are some exceptions: as,

Amico	friend	amici
Teólogo	theologian	teologi
Greco	Greek	Greci
Porco	hog	porci

19. Some nouns ending in the singular in *io* drop the *o* to form the plural: as, *occhio*, eye, *occhi*, pl.; others change *io* into *j*: as, *premio*, reward, *premj*, pl.

20. The following terminations are invariable:—

- à (accented) as *Città*, town or towns.
- i as *crisi*, crisis, s. or pl.
- ù (accented) as *virtù*, virtue or virtues.

SPANISH.

18. Nouns ending in consonants (except *z*,) also those terminating in *á* or *í* (accented,) form their plurals by adding *es* to the singular.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Cañon	cannon	cañones
Guarnicion	garrison	guarniciones
Superior	superior	superiores
Ley	law	leyes
Bajá	pasha	bajáes

Except a few, such as *crisis*, having the accent on the penult, and which are invariable; also *papá*, *mamá*, *nohá*, which add *s* to form the plural.

19. Substantives terminating in *z* change this letter into *ces* to form the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Luz	light	luces
Actriz	actress	actrices

PORTUGUESE.

18. Nouns ending in *ão* have three different ways of forming the plural, viz. :—

1st, By adding an *s*, according to the above general rule : as,

Irmão (brother) irmãos, pl.

2d, By changing *ão* into *ões* : as,  
Disposição (disposition) disposições, pl.

3d, By changing *ão* into *ães* ; as,  
Escrivão (scrivener) escrevães, pl.

*Remark.*—No certain, fixed rule can be established for this termination.

19. Nouns ending in consonants add *es* to the singular, with certain exceptions.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Colher	spoon	colheres
Voz	voice	vozes
Senhor	sir	senhores

20. Those terminating in *s* in the singular are invariable in the plural.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

21. Nouns ending in *s, x, z*, in the singular, remain the same in the plural number.

22. Some words are irregular in the formation of the plural; such are:—

*Ciel*, meaning heaven in general terms, should be, in the plural, *cieux*:

meaning any particular sky, should be *ciels*: as, *Sous un des plus beaux ciels de l'Europe*, Under one of the most beautiful skies of Europe.

*Œil* has two plurals; namely, *yeux*, when expressing the organ of sight:

*œils* in such compound words as *œil-de-bœuf*, (a kind of window.)

*Aïeul*, meaning grandfather, is written *aïeuls* in the plural; but, when meaning ancestors or grandfathers, it should be *aïeux*.

## ITALIAN.

21. There are some nouns ending in *o* which are masculine in the singular number, and by changing the termination into *a* become feminine in the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Un miglio	a mile	le miglia
Un uovo	an egg	le uova

22. Also several ending in *o* singular, with two terminations for the plural; namely, *i* masc. and *a* fem.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
		Masc.	Fem.
Braccio	arm	bracci	braccia
Dito	finger	diti	dita
Ginocchio	knee	ginocchi	ginocchia
Grido	cry	gridi	grida
Labbro	lip	labbri	labbra
Membro	limb	membri	membra
Muro	wall	muri	mura
Osso	bone	ossi	ossa
Riso	laugh	risi	risa

*Remark.*—*Legno*, wood, has three terminations in the plural: *legni*, meaning wood in general; *legne* and *legna*, signifying wood for burning.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

21. Nouns ending in *al, ol, ul*, change the *l* into *es* for the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Animal

animal

animaes

Sol

sun

soes

Paúl

marsh

paúes

*Except cal, consul, mal, which add es : as, cales, &c.*

22. Nouns ending in *el* change the *l* into *is*.

*Example.*

Parcel, a hidden rock

parceis, pl.

23. Nouns ending in *il* change the *l* into *s*.

*Example.*

Funil

funnel

funis, pl.

24. Nouns ending in *em, im, om, um*, change the *m* into *ns*.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Homem

man

homens

Fim

end

fins

Dom

don

dons

Atum

tunny

atuns

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Of the Gender.

## FRENCH.

25. The French language has no neuter gender ; therefore, inanimate objects are either masculine or feminine. } Same.

*Remark.*—It is perfectly useless to attempt giving any rules by which the gender of French substantives representing inanimate objects can be ascertained. Many grammarians have vainly endeavoured to classify them : but reading and frequent reference to a dictionary are the only feasible methods of acquirement. Some nouns are masculine in one sense and feminine in another. The following are those in most common use :—

26. *Aigle*, eagle, meaning an ensign or armorial bearing, is *feminine* : as, l'aigle française. It is masculine in all other senses.

27. *Chose*, thing, is *masculine*, when used with the word *quelque*, except when followed by a verb in the subjunctive mood : as,

Quelque chose de grand.

Something great.

Quelque chose que j'*ai*e faite.

Whatever thing I may have done.

(Here in the feminine, the verb being in the subjunctive.)

## ITALIAN.

The gender of Italian nouns is much more easily subjected to general rules than that in the French language. The masculine and feminine are distinguished as follows :—

26. *Masculine* nouns end

in <i>o</i>	<i>except</i>	mano	hand
		eco	echo
in <i>me</i>	„	arme	arms
		fame	hunger
		speme	hope
in <i>re</i>	„	febbre	fever
		madre	mother
		polvere	dust
		scure	axe
		torre	tower
in <i>nte</i>	„	corrente	current
		gente	people
		lente	lentil
		mente	mind
		semente	seed

All which are *feminine*.

# SUBSTANTIVES.

## Of the Gender.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.  
 }  
 } Same.

} Same.  
 }  
 } Same.

26. Feminine nouns end

in *a*, *except*

Guardacosta	custom-house boat
Guardaropa	wardrobe
Tapaboca	slap on the mouth
and, as in Italian, several words adopted from the Greek : as,	
Poema poem	Clima climate
and names of professions, &c., applying to men.	

in *d*, *except*

Ardid	stratagem
Laud	lute
Sud	south

and a few others.

in *ion*, *except*

Gorrion	sparrow
Morrion	steel helmet.

26. Feminine nouns end

in *a*, *except*

Dia	day
Chá	tea
Planeta	planet
and, as in Italian and Spanish, several words adopted from the Greek : as,	
Clima	climate

and nouns signifying occupations belonging to men : as,

Mariola,	a porter.
----------	-----------

in *ade*, *except*

Alvaiade	ceruse
----------	--------

in *ude*, *except*

Alaúde	lute
--------	------

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

*Chose* is also masculine when used with *autre* in an indeterminate sense : as,

Autre chose de bon est promis.  
Some other good thing is promised.

Note that *de* is employed after *chose* and before the adjective which qualifies it.

In all other senses this noun is feminine.

28. *Couple*, when speaking of two beings united by marriage, friendship, family, &c., is masculine : as,

Un couple charmant.  
A charming couple.

When not referring to persons, it is feminine : as,

Une couple de pigeons.  
A brace of pigeons.  
Une couple d'heures.  
A couple of hours.

29. *Délice* is masculine in the singular number, and feminine in the plural : as,

Un vrai délice.  
A true pleasure.  
Mes plus chères délices.  
My dearest pleasures.

## ITALIAN.

27. Feminine nouns end

in *a*, except several words derived from the Greek, and names of professions, &c., applying to men : such as,

Clima	climate	} which, with many others, are masculine.
Poema	poem	
Problema	problem	
Tema	theme	
Dentista	dentist	
Farmacista	chemist	

in *u*, except *Ragù*, *ragout*, and some names of countries ; as *Corfù*, *Perù*, which are masculine.

28. Names of fruit-trees ending in *o*, and which are of the masculine gender, by changing the termination into *a*, become feminine, and then signify the fruit ; as,

Mandorlo	an almond-tree.
Mandorla	almond.

29. To the preceding rule there are some exceptions : the following express both the tree and the fruit, and are masculine :—

Arancio	orange
Dattero	date
Fico	fig
Pomo	apple

## SUBSTANTIVES.

SPANISH.

27. *Masculine* nouns for the most part end in any other letters than *a, d, or ion.*

PORTUGUESE.

27. *Masculine* nouns for the most part end in any other letters than *a, ade, ude.*

28. The following, both in Spanish and Portuguese, are the most common among several exceptions to the preceding rule: custom has assigned to them the *feminine* gender. It is worthy of remark that most of the words are written precisely the same in both languages.

SPANISH.

Cal	lime
Flor	flower
Nuez	nut
Cruz	cross
Corte	court
Paz	peace
Voz	voice
Luz	light
Ley	law
Fé	faith
Nieve	snow
Muerte	death
Ánade	duck
Base	base
Fuente	fountain
Ave	fowl

PORTUGUESE.

cal
flôr
noz
cruz
côrte
paz
voz
luz
lei
fé
neve
morte
adem
base
fonte
ave

SPANISH.

Gente
Carne
Peste
Parte
Suerte
Col
Vez
Imágen
Llave
Torre
Noche
Liebre
Serpiente
Fiebre
Tarde

people
flesh
plague
part
fortune
cabbage
time
image
key
tower
night
hare
serpent
fever
afternoon

PORTUGUESE.

gente
carne
peste
parte
sorte
couve
vez
imagem
chave
torre
noite
lebre
serpente
febre
tarde

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

30. *Gens*. All Adjectives and words relating to this noun are *masculine* when *following* it : as,

Ce sont des *gens excellents*.

They are excellent people.

And *feminine* when they *precede* the word *gens* : as,

Les *vieilles gens* sont soupçonneux.

Old people are suspicious.

When the words *certain, tout, quel, tel, immediately* precede *gens*, they are placed in the *feminine* ; but, if another word intervene, they must be in the *masculine* : as,

*Certaines gens* d'esprit.

Certain people of talent.

*Tous les jeunes gens* sont imprudents.

All young people are imprudent.

31. The following are masculine in the first signification, and feminine in the second :—

	Masc.	Fem.
<i>Livre</i>	book.	pound
<i>Manche</i>	handle	sleeve
<i>Mémoire</i>	memorandum	memory
<i>Mode</i>	system	fashion
<i>Page</i>	attendant	page of a book
<i>Poste</i>	place ; position	for letters
<i>Souris</i>	smile	mouse
<i>Tour</i>	turn	tower
<i>Trompette</i>	trumpeter	trumpet
<i>Voile</i>	veil	sail.

## ITALIAN.

30. Some nouns are of both genders : as,

Il, or la fine

the end

Il, or la folgore

the thunderbolt

Il, or la fonte

the fountain

31. There are some few nouns which are masculine in one signification, and feminine in another : as,

	Masc.	Fem.
<i>Dramma</i>	a play	dram weight
<i>Margine</i>	margin	scar
<i>Tema</i>	theme	fear.

## SPANISH.

29. In Spanish, there are several nouns ending in *z*, denoting qualities in the abstract; such are generally *feminine*: as,

*Fluidez*

*Liquidez*

liquidity

liquidness

## PORTUGUESE.

29. There is no correct rule for distinguishing the gender of nouns ending in *ão*: although the greater part take the *feminine* gender, a very large quantity are of the *masculine*.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Augmentatives.

## FRENCH.

32. The French language has not the advantage possessed by the others of being able to augment nouns by the addition of certain terminations called *Augmentatives*; but adjectives must be employed to qualify the object.

*Examples.*

Un homme grand	a tall man
Un vilain homme	a disagreeable man.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, the noun may be augmented by changing the last vowel into *one* or *otto*: a *feminine* noun thus changed becomes *masculine*.

*Remark.*—There are also several terminations, such as *accio*, *astro*, *azzo* (*a* in the fem. :) these imply contempt, or convey the idea of some bad quality; their use should be attempted only by those well acquainted with the language.

*Examples.*

Libro, a book	librone, a great book
Una donna, a woman	un bel donnone, a fine woman.

## Diminutives.

33. Almost the same remark may apply here, as in the preceding on Augmentatives; but sometimes a noun may be made a diminutive by the addition of *ette*.

*Examples.*

Un petit homme	a little man
Maison	a house
<i>Maisonette</i>	a small house.

Italian Diminutives are:—

*ino, ello, etto*, masculine  
*ina, ella, etta*, feminine.

When adding these, the last vowel of the noun is suppressed (Note *a*.)

*Examples.*

Libro, a book	<i>libretto</i> , a small book
Casa, a house	<i>casetta</i> , a small house

Note *a*.—Some diminutives are irregular in their formation: as *cane*, a dog; *cagnolino*, a little dog.



Augmentatives.

SPANISH.

In Spanish, the noun is augmented by adding the following terminations to the last consonant.

*on, ote, azo*, for the masculine.

*ona, ota, aza*, for the feminine.

Sometimes a feminine noun becomes masculine when augmented.

*Examples.*

Hombre, a man

*hombron*, a tall man

Muger, a woman

*mugerona*, a masculine woman

Mosca, a fly

*moscon*, a large fly.

PORTUGUESE.

The terminations in Portuguese (Note *a*) most commonly used are :—

*rão, zarrão, lhão*, for the masculine.

*ona, ota*, for the feminine.

Vilifying nouns, or those expressing contempt, are of frequent use : they mostly end in *chão, aço, açã*.

The same remark applies to them as that in the Italian column.

*Examples.*

Chapeo, a hat

*chapeirão*, a big hat

Mulher, a woman

*mulherona*, a masculine woman

Sabio, a learned man

*sabichão*, a pedant.

Diminutives.

Spanish Diminutives are :—

*illo, ito, ico, uelo*, masculine.

*illa, ita, ica, uela*, feminine.

These are added to the last consonant of the noun.

*Examples.*

Juan, John

*Juanito*, little John

Casa, house

*casita*, small house.

Portuguese Diminutives are :—

*ete, ito, ilho, inho, zinho*, masculine.

*ita, ilha, inha, zinha*, feminine.

*Examples.*

Lugar, a village

*lugarete*, or *lugarinho*, a little village.

Cara, a face

*carinha*, a little face.

Note *a*.—The manner of adding these terminations is very irregular in Portuguese when the last letter of the noun is a vowel. after a little practice, the ear will be the best guide.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Compound Substantives.

## FRENCH.

34. In English, there are several compounds expressed by two nouns; these in French require the preposition *à* between them, and sometimes the article.

*Examples.*

Moulin <i>à</i> eau	water-mill
Machine <i>à</i> vapeur	steam machine
Pot <i>au</i> lait	milk-pot.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, a preposition is also required, namely—*da* when the idea of *use* is implied; *a* when wishing to express “by *means* of,” or “*with*.”

*Examples.*

Una camera <i>da</i> letto	a bed-room
Bastimento <i>a</i> vapore	steam-boat
Casa <i>a</i> tre torri	house with three towers.

## Plural of Compound Substantives.

35. French compounds mostly consist of two words joined together by a hyphen, a preposition sometimes intervening. When the words are two substantives, or a substantive and an adjective, each takes the mark of the plural, *except* when a preposition comes between: in which case the first noun alone is changed to form the plural (Note *a*.) Verbs, adverbs, and prepositions are invariable.

Italian compounds are not, like the French, joined together by a hyphen. The parts compounded are made to form one word, which is subject to the rules already given on the formation of plurals, or they are used separately with a preposition as in preceding examples, the first noun only taking the mark of the plural.

Note *a*.—Tête-à-tête is an exception: it remains the same in the plural: as, *des tête-à-tête*.

Compound Substantives.

SPANISH.

In Spanish, the preposition *de* is employed, except in some instances where *para* (for) is required in order to give the precise meaning (Note *a.*) } Same.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Cuarto *de* dormir  
Maquina *de* vapor  
Botella *para* vino

a bed-room  
steam-machinery  
wine bottle.

Instrumento *de* vento  
Maquina *de* vapor  
Papel *para* cartas.

a wind instrument  
steam machinery  
letter paper.

Plural of Compound Substantives.

} Same.

} The Portuguese frequently join two words by a hyphen, the last word alone taking the mark of the plural; but it is correct to follow the rule laid down for Italian and Spanish compounds.

note *a.*—Botella *de* vino means a bottle of wine.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
<i>Examples.</i>		<i>Examples.</i>	
SINGULAR.		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Un chien-loup	a wolf dog	Un luogotenente	a lieutenant
Un grand-maître	a grand-master	Un arcobaleno	a rainbow
		Cavadenti	tooth-drawer
Un arc-en-ciel	a rainbow		
Un cure-dents	a tooth-pick		
Un pour-boire	drink-money		

PLURAL.

*des chiens-loups**des grands-maîtres*

(Note a.)

*des arcs-en-ciel.**des cure-dents**des pour-boire.*

PLURAL.

*luogotenenti**arcobaleni**cavadenti*

Note a.—When *grand* is used with an apostrophe, it is invariable: as, *des grand'-mères*.

# SUBSTANTIVES.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>Examples.</i>		<i>Examples.</i>	
Un lugarteniente	a lieutenant	Um lugartenente	a lieutenant
Un sacadinero	a toy	Passa-tempo, or	pastime
Un sacamuélas	tooth-drawer	Passatempo	
		(The latter preferred.)	
			<i>lugartenentes</i>
			<i>passa-tempos, or</i>
			<i>passatempos.</i>

*General Remark.*—No particular explanation of this part of speech is necessary: the nature and office of the Adjective are easily comprehended. In all languages, it agrees in gender and number with the noun it

### Formation of the Feminine.

#### FRENCH.

36. The feminine of French Adjectives is formed, as a general rule, by the addition of *e* mute to the masculine singular, some adjectives in *er* and *et* accenting the last *e* of the masculine (Note *a.*)

#### Examples.

Masc.		Fem.
Petit	little	<i>petite</i>
Étranger	foreign	<i>étrangère</i>
Secret	secret	<i>secrète.</i>

#### ITALIAN.

The feminine terminations in this language are not subject to so many variations as in French.

Most adjectives end in *o* and *e*.

Those in *o* masculine change into *a* for the feminine.

#### Examples.

Masc.		Fem.
Cattivo	bad	<i>cattiva</i>
Umido	damp	<i>umida.</i>

Note *a.*—There are several French adjectives irregular in the formation of the feminine termination; the principal are:—

Doux, m.	douce, f.	Public, m.	publique, f.	Gros, m.	grosse, f.	Gentil, m.	gentille, f.
Faux, m.	fausse, f.	Sec, m.	sèche, f.	Beau, m.	belle, f.	Long, m.	longue, f.
Vieux, m.	vieille, f.	Bas, m.	basse, f.	Favori, m.	favorite, f.	Mou, m.	molle, f.
Blanc, m.	blanche, f.	Expès, m.	expresse, f.	Fou, m.	folle, f.	Nouveau, m.	nouvelle, f.
Franc, m.	franche, f.	Gras, m.	grasse, f.	Frais, m.	fraîche, f.	Sot, m.	soûte, f.

Also a large number ending in *eur*, which have four different terminations in the feminine, namely, changing *eur* into *eure*, *euse*, *rice*, *resse*: as, *antérieur*, m., *antérieure*, f.; *boudeur*, m., *boudeuse*, f., &c. For these, a dictionary is the best reference.

qualifies, to this effect, varying in termination according to the rules which follow. Its degrees of comparison are afterwards given, and its position in a sentence determined, so far as it is possible to do so by any fixed rules.

### Formation of the Feminine.

#### SPANISH.

Feminine Adjectives are thus formed :—  
Those ending in *o* masc. change this letter into *a*.

#### *Example.*

Serio, masc.      serious      *seria*, fem.

All other terminations are common to both genders.

#### *Examples.*

Habil,    masc. and fem.      skilful  
Inferior,      ”      inferior  
Elegante,      ”      elegant.

#### PORTUGUESE.

} Same, (Note *a*.)

#### *Example.*

Famoso, masc.      famous      *famosa*, fem.

} Same.

#### *Examples.*

Feliz, masc. and fem.      happy  
Gentil,      ”      genteel  
Breve,      ”      short.

Note *a*.—*Só*, only or alone, when it serves as an adjective, is the only one in *o* which is common to both genders, (except numerals, and some in *ao*;) but it takes *s* for the plural, as : *As religiosas estão sós com Deus*—Nuns are alone with God.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

37. Adjectives ending in *e* mute remain the same in the feminine.

*Examples.*

Un *jeune* homme                      a young man  
 Une *jeune* fille                      a young girl.

38. Exceptions to the general rule are as follows:—

Adj. in *f* change into *ve*: as,

Actif, masc.                      *active*, fem.

*x* into *se*: as,

Joyeux, masc.                      *joyeuse*, fem.

in *on*, *en*, *el*, *eil*, *et*, double the final consonant and take *e* mute: as,

Bon, masc.                      *bonne*, fem.

Actuel, masc.                      *actuelle*, fem.

## Formation of the Plural.

39. The plural of Adjectives is formed in the same manner as that of Substantives. } Same.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Un joli garçon	a pretty boy	des <i>jolis</i> garçons
Une jolie fille	a pretty girl	des <i>jolies</i> filles.
Une belle femme	a handsome woman	des <i>belles</i> femmes
Un habit noir	a black coat	des habits <i>noirs</i> .

## ITALIAN.

Adjectives ending in *e* masculine remain the same in the feminine.

*Examples.*

Masc.		Fem.
Amabile	amiable	<i>amabile</i>
Audace	audacious	<i>audace</i>

*Remark.*—There are some few adjectives in *i* which are also invariable in gender.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Uomo bello	a fine man	uomini <i>belli</i>
Donna bella	a fine woman	donne <i>belle</i>
Uomo felice	a happy man	uomini <i>felici</i>
Donna felice	a happy woman	donne <i>felici</i> .



SPANISH.

With some few exceptions, such as adjectives derived from names of countries, which add *a* to the masculine.

*Examples.*

Español, masc.  
Ingles, masc.

*española*, fem.  
*inglesa*, fem.

PORTUGUESE.

*Except* some adjectives derived from the names of countries, and a few others in *or, um, u*, which add *a* to the masculine.

*Examples.*

Portuguez, masc.  
Cru, masc. (raw)

*portuguesa*, fem.  
*crua*, fem.

*Remark.*— A few adjectives in *ao* change this termination into *á* (accented): as,

*Mao*, masc. (bad)

*má*, fem.

Formation of the Plural.

} Same.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.  
Hombre bello  
Muger bella  
Muchacho feliz  
Muchacha feliz

a fine man  
a fine woman  
a happy boy  
a happy girl

PLURAL.  
hombres *bellos*  
mugeres *bellas*  
muchachos *felices*  
muchachas *felices*.

} Same.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.  
Homem feliz  
Toalha fina  
Autoridad central  
Mulher agradável

happy man  
fine towel  
central authority  
agreeable woman

PLURAL.  
homens *felizes*  
toalhas *finas*  
autoridades *centraes*  
mulheres *agradaveis*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Degrees of Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.
40. The <i>Positive</i> expresses the quality of an object without any comparison.	} Same.	
<i>Example.</i>		<i>Example.</i>
Un beau cheval	a fine horse.	Un piccolo bambino a small child.

## COMPARATIVE.

41. The Comparative is divided into three classes: } Same.  
namely, of *Superiority*, *Inferiority*, and *Equality*.

## Comparative of Superiority.

42. This, in French, is formed by *plus* (more) before the adjective, the word *than* being expressed by *que*.

*Examples.*

Un élément *plus* universel et *plus* simple *que* l'océan.  
An element more universal and simple than the ocean.  
Il avait une sœur *plus* jeune *que* ses frères.  
He had a sister younger than his brothers.

In Italian, place *più* (more) before the adjective, the word *than* being expressed by *di* and by *che*, as follows:—  
By *di* before a proper name, a numeral adjective, or a pronoun which is not the subject of a verb following it.

*Examples.*

Egli è *più* ricco *di* voi e *di* Bernardo.  
He is richer than you and than Bernardo.  
*Più di* tre lire.  
More than three pounds.  
Voi siete *più* generoso *del* vostro amico.  
You are more generous than your friend.

## Degrees of Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

	SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.
} Same.		} Same.			
	<i>Example.</i>			<i>Example.</i>	
	Una muger rica	a rich woman.		Uma excellente eleição	an excellent choice.

## COMPARATIVE.

} Same.		} Same.	

## Comparative of Superiority.

In Spanish, the Comparative of Superiority is formed }  
 by placing *mas* (more) before the adjective, the word }  
*than* being translated by *que*. } In Portuguese by *mais* (more) and *que*.

*Examples.*

Él es *mas* viejo *que* ella.  
 He is older than she is.  
 Tiene *mas* dinero *que* yo.  
 He has more money than I.

*Examples.*

É *mais* forte *que* seu irmão.  
 He is stronger than his brother.  
 Elle é *mais* rico *que* ella.  
 He is richer than she is.

*Remark.*—The Portuguese frequently place the word  
*do* before *que*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## ITALIAN.

*Than* is rendered by *che* before a pronoun which is the subject of a verb following it, and when the comparison is between two substantives, adjectives, adverbs, or infinitives.

*Examples.*

Egli è *più* dotto *che* io non credeva.  
 He is more learned than I thought.  
 Si vedono *più servi che padroni*.  
 More servants than masters are seen.  
 Ella è *più ricca che bella*.  
 She is richer than she is beautiful.  
 È meglio *tardi che mai*.  
 It is better late than never.  
 È meglio *ridere che piangere*.  
 It is better to laugh than to cry.

## Comparative of Inferiority.

43. The Comparative of Inferiority is expressed by }  
*moins* (less) before the adjective, and *que* after. } In Italian, by *meno* (less) and *che*.

*Example.*

Elle est *moins* riche *que* son frère.  
 She is less rich than her brother.

*Example.*

Egli è *meno* ricco *che* generoso.  
 He is less rich than generous.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

## Comparative of Inferiority.

} In Spanish, by *menos* (less) and *que*.

} Same.

*Example.*

El oro es *menos* útil *que* el hierro.  
Gold is less useful than iron.

*Example.*

O ouro é *menos* útil *que* o ferro.  
Gold is less useful than iron.

## Comparative of Equality.

## FRENCH.

44. This is expressed by the words *aussi* and *que*.

*Example.*

Qui lance l'homme et ses armées *aussi* loin et *aussi* vite  
*que* sa pensée.

Which urges on man and his armies as far and as quick  
as his thought.

## ITALIAN.

The Italian Comparative of Equality is formed as follows:—

*Examples.*

Egli è *tanto* dotto *quanto* il maestro.

Or, *così* dotto *come* „

Or, „ dotto *quanto* „

Or, *altrettanto* dotto *che* „

He is as learned as the master.

## The Superlative Degree.

45. The Superlative Degree is both *relative* and *absolute*. It is *relative* when expressing an idea of comparison, and then requires the definite article before the adverbs of comparison, such as *more*, *less*, *better*, &c., except when a possessive pronoun precedes the adverb.

Same; except that the article should not be repeated when the adverb follows the noun.

*Examples.*

Les parfums *les plus* suaves et *les plus* inconnus arrivaient jusqu' aux vaisseaux.

Perfumes the most fragrant and unknown reached the vessels.

*Son plus* puissant ennemi.

His most powerful enemy.

*Examples.*

*Nella più* bassa falda.

On the lowest side.

*L'uomo più* dotto.

The most learned man.

## Comparative of Equality.

## SPANISH.

} In Spanish, by *tan* and *como*.

*Example.*

Juan es *tan* rico, *como* Alberto.  
John is as rich as Albert.

Before another adjective, *cuan* may also be used instead of *como*: as,

Él es *tan* rico *cuan* hermoso.  
He is rich as he is handsome.

## PORTUGUESE.

} In Portuguese by *tão* and *como*.

*Example.*

João é *tão* rico *como* Alberto.  
John is as rich as Albert.

} Same of *quanto*; as,

É *tão* rico *quanto* bello.  
He is rich as he is handsome.

## The Superlative Degree.

} Same as Italian.

*Examples.*

*La mas* ingrata muger.  
The most ungrateful woman.  
*Los sucesos mas* comunes.  
The most common incidents.

} Same.

*Examples.*

A *mais* viva alegria do povo.  
The liveliest joy of the people.  
Com a *confiança mais* expressiva.  
With the most expressive confidence.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

46. The Superlative *Absolute* admits of no comparison, and is expressed by means of adverbs, such as *very, infinitely, &c.*

*Examples.*

Mon père était *très* riche.

My father was very rich.

Elle est *infiniment* belle.

She is exceedingly beautiful.

Ce que vous dites est *parfaitement* juste.

What you say is perfectly just.

## ITALIAN.

Same: it may also be expressed by changing the last vowel of the positive into *issimo* (Note *a.*)

*Examples.*

Onesto honest

*Onestissimo*

*Molto* onesto

*Assai* onesto

very honest.

47. The following adjectives, among others, form their degrees of comparison irregularly:—

In Italian, thus:—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Good <i>bon</i>	Better <i>meilleur</i>	Best <i>le meilleur</i>	Good <i>buono</i>	migliore	ottimo
Bad <i>mauvais</i>	Worse <i>pire</i>	Worst <i>le pire</i> .	Bad <i>cattivo</i>	peggiore	pessimo
Little <i>petit</i>	Less <i>moindre</i> .	Least <i>le moindre</i> .	Little <i>piccolo</i>	minore	minimo.

Note *a.*—Adjectives ending in *co, ca, go, ga*, take the letter *h* before *issimo*: as, *largo, larghissimo*: those in *io* drop both the vowels.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

In Spanish the Superlative *Absolute* is also expressed by means of adverbs, such as *very*, &c. ; or by adding *ísimo* to the last consonant (Note *a.*) } Same, and by adding *íssimo* (Note *b.*)

*Examples.*

*Examples.*

Hermoso	handsome.
<i>Hermosísimo</i>	} very handsome.
<i>Muy hermoso</i>	

Numeroso	numerous.
<i>Numerosísimo</i>	} very numerous.
Muito numeroso	

} In Spanish thus :—

} In Portuguese thus :—

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.		Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Good	bueno	mejor	optimo	Good	bom	melhor	optimo
Bad	malo	peor	pesimo	Bad	mao	peor	pessimo
Little	pequeño	menor	minimo.	Little	pequeno	menor	minimo.

Note *a.*—*ble* changes into *bil* ; *co* changes into *qu* ; *z* changes into *c*—before *ísimo*.

Note *b.*—*Z* changes into *c* ; *go* changes into *qu* ; *vel* changes into *bil*—before *íssimo*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Numeral Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

48. The Cardinal Numbers remain the same for both genders, except *un*, and a few hereafter noted.

49. The Ordinal Numbers are as other adjectives, adding an *s* in the plural. Ordinals are invariable as regards gender; they all terminate in *e*, with the exception of "premier" and "second," which make "première" and "seconde" for the feminine.

## ITALIAN.

The Cardinal Numbers are—like the French—invariable, with the exception of "uno" and its compounds *mille* and *milione* (Note *a.*)

The Ordinal Numbers are as adjectives, agreeing in gender, &c., with their nouns.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Un, une
2. Deux
3. Trois
4. Quatre
5. Cinq
6. Six
7. Sept
8. Huit
9. Neuf
10. Dix

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Premier, première
- 2nd. Second, seconde (or deuxième)
- 3rd. Troisième
- 4th. Quatrième
- 5th. Cinquième
- 6th. Sixième
- 7th. Septième
- 8th. Huitième
- 9th. Neuvième
- 10th. Dixième

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Uno, una
2. Due
3. Tre
4. Quattro
5. Cinque
6. Sei
7. Sette
8. Otto
9. Nove
10. Dieci

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Primo
- 2nd. Secondo
- 3rd. Terzo
- 4th. Quarto
- 5th. Quinto
- 6th. Sesto
- 7th. Settimo
- 8th. Ottavo
- 9th. Nono
- 10th. Decimo

Note *a.*—When Cardinal Numbers are used as substantives, they are declinable : as, *i quattri, i cinqui, &c.*, except *tre, sei*, and *dieci*, which are invariable : as, *un tre, due tre, &c.*

## Numeral Adjectives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish all Cardinal Numbers except "uno" and the compounds of "ciento" are indeclinable.

} Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese all Cardinal Numbers, except *um*, one, *dous*, two, and the compounds of *cento*, a hundred, are indeclinable.

} Same.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Uno
2. Dos
3. Tres
4. Cuatro
5. Cinco
6. Seis
7. Siete
8. Ocho
9. Nueve
10. Diez

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Primero
- 2nd. Segundo
- 3rd. Tercero
- 4th. Cuarto
- 5th. Quinto
- 6th. Sexto
- 7th. Séptimo
- 8th. Octavo
- 9th. Noveno, or nono
- 10th. Décimo, or deceno

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Um, m., uma, fem.
2. Dois or dous, m.,  
duas, fem.
3. Tres
4. Quatro
5. Cinco
6. Seis
7. Sete, or sette
8. Oito, or outo
9. Nove
10. Dez

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Primeiro, m. a. fem.
- 2nd. Segundo
- 3d. Terceiro
- 4th. Quarto
- 5th. Quinto
- 6th. Sexto
- 7th. Setimo, or septimo
- 8th. Oitavo
- 9th. Nono
- 10th. Decimo

## ADJECTIVES.

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.
11. Onze	11th. Onzième	11. Undici	11th. Undecimo, undicesimo, decimo primo
12. Douze	12th. Douzième	12. Dodici	12th. Duodecimo, dodicesimo, decimo secondo
13. Treize	13th. Treizième	13. Tredici	13th. Decimo terzo, tredicesimo
14. Quatorze	14th. Quatorzième	14. Quattordici	14th. Decimo quarto, quattordicesimo
15. Quinze	15th. Quinzième	15. Quindici	15th. Decimo quinto, quindicesimo
16. Seize	16th. Seizième	16. Sedici	16th. Decimo sesto, sedicesimo
17. Dix-sept	17th. Dix-septième	17. Diciassette	17th. Decimo settimo, diciassettesimo
18. Dix-huit	18th. Dix-huitième	18. Diciotto	18th. Decimo attavo, diciottesimo
19. Dix-neuf	19th. Dix-neuvième	19. Diciannove	19th. Decimo nono, diciannovesimo
20. Vingt	20th. Vingtième	20. Venti	20th. Ventesimo, vigesimo
21. Vingt et un	21st. Vingt et unième	21. Ventuno, or Vent'uno	21st. Ventesimo primo, vigesimo primo
22. Vingt-deux	22nd. Vingt-deuxième	22. Ventidue	22nd. Ventesimo secondo, or vigesimo secondo
23. Vingt-trois	23rd. Vingt-troisième	23. Ventitre	23rd. Ventesimo terzo, or vigesimo terzo
24. Vingt-quatre	24th. Vingt-quatrième	24. Ventiquattro	24th. Ventesimo quarto, or vigesimo quarto

## ADJECTIVES.

53

CARDINAL NUMBERS.	SPANISH. ORDINAL NUMBERS.	CARDINAL NUMBERS.	PORTUGUESE. ORDINAL NUMBERS.
11. Once	11th. Undécimo, or Onceno	11. Onze	11th. Undécimo, or decimo-primeiro
12. Doce	12th. Duodécimo, or doceno	12. Doze	12th. Duodécimo, or decimo-segundo
13. Trece	13th. Décimo tercio, or treceno	13. Treze	13th. Decimo-terceiro
14. Catorce	14th. Décimo cuarto, or catorceno	14. Quatorze	14th. Decimo-cuarto
15. Quince	15th. Décimo quinto, or quinceno	15. Quinze	15th. Decimo-quinto
16. Diez y seis	16th. Décimo sexto	16. Dezaseis, or dezeses	16th. Decimo-sexto
17. Diez y siete	17th. Décimo séptimo	17. Dezasete, or dezesete	17th. Decimo-septimo
18. Diez y ocho	18th. Décimo octavo	18. Dezoito	18th. Decimo-oitavo
19. Diez y nueve	19th. Décimo nono	19. Dezanove	19th. Decimo-nono
20. Veinte	20th. Vigésimo	20. Vinte	20th. Vigésimo, or vintésimo
21. Veinte y uno	21st. Vigésimo primo	21. Vinte e um	21st. „ primeiro
22. Veinte y dos	22nd. Vigésimo segundo	22. Vinte e dois	22nd. „ segundo
23. Veinte y tres	23rd. Vigésimo tercio	23. Vinte e tres	23rd. „ terceiro
24. Veinte y cuatro	24th. Vigésimo cuarto	24. Vinte e quatro	24th. „ quarto

## ADJECTIVES.

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.
25. Vingt-cinq	25th. Vingt-cinquième	25. Venticinque	25th. Ventesimo quinto, or vigesimo quinto
26. Vingt-six	26th. Vingt-sixième	26. Ventisei	26th. Ventesimo sesto, or vigesimo sesto
27. Vingt-sept	27th. Vingt-septième	27. Ventisette	27th. Ventesimo settimo, or vigesimo settimo
28. Vingt-huit	28th. Vingt-huitième	28. Ventotto, or Vent'otto	28th. Ventesimo ottavo, or vigesimo ottavo
29. Vingt-neuf	29th. Vingt-neuvième	29. Ventinove	29th. Ventesimo nono, or vigesimo nono
30. Trente	30th. Trentième	30. Trenta	30th. Trentesimo, or trigesimo
40. Quarante	40th. Quarantième	40. Quaranta	40th. Quarantesimo, or quadragesimo
50. Cinquante	50th. Cinquantième	50. Cinquanta	50th. Cinquantesimo, or quinquagesimo
60. Soixante	60th. Soixantième	60. Sessanta	60th. Sessantesimo, or sessagesimo
70. Soixante et dix	70th. Soixante et dixième	70. Settanta	70th. Settantesimo, or settuagesimo
80. Quatre-vingts	80th. Quatre-vingtième	80. Ottanta	80th. Ottantesimo, or ottuagesimo
90. Quatre-vingt-dix	90th. Quatre-vingt-dixième	90. Novanta	90th. Novantesimo, or nonagesimo
100. Cent	100th. Centième	100. Cento	100th. Centesimo

## ADJECTIVES.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.
25. Veinte y cinco	25th. Vigésimo quinto	25. Vinte e cinco	25th. Vigésimo quinto
26. Veinte y seis	26th. Vigésimo sexto	26. Vinte e seis	26th. „ sexto
27. Veinte y siete	27th. Vigésimo séptimo	27. Vinte e sete	27th. „ sétimo
28. Veinte y ocho	28th. Vigésimo octavo	28. Vinte e oito	28th. „ oitavo
29. Veinte y nueve	29th. Vigésimo nono	29. Vinte e nove	29th. „ nono
30. Treinta	30th. Trigésimo	30. Trinta	30th. Trigesimo
40. Cuarenta	40th. Cuadragésimo	40. Quarenta	40th. Quadragesimo
50. Cincuenta	50th. Quincuagésimo	50. Cincoenta	50th. Quinquagesimo
60. Sesenta	60th. Sexagésimo	60. Sessenta	60th. Sexagesimo
70. Setenta	70th. Septuagésimo	70. Setenta	70th. Septuagesimo
80. Ochenta	80th. Octagésimo	80. Oitenta	80th. Octagesimo
90. Noventa	90th. Nonagésimo	90. Noventa	90th. Nonagesimo
100. Ciento	100th. Centésimo	100. Cem, or centa	100th. Centesimo

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

101. Cent un  
102. Cent deux  
200. Deux cents

1,000. Mille  
10,000. Dix mille  
1,000,000. Million

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Cent-unième  
102nd. Cent-deuxième  
200th. Deux centième

1,000th. Millième  
10,000th. Dix millième  
1,000,000th. Millionième

## ITALIAN.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

101. Cent uno  
102. Cento due  
200. Dugento, or due-  
cento

1,000. Mille  
10,000. Dieci mila  
1,000,000. Un milione

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Centesimo primo  
102nd. Centesimo secondo  
200th. Docentesimo

1,000th. Millesimo  
10,000th. Decimo millesimo  
1,000,000th.

50. The following are correctly speaking substantives, but, expressing the idea of number, may be classed among numeral adjectives. They are divided into three kinds :

} Same.

1st, Collective, as—

Une douzaine a dozen.  
Une vingtaine a score.  
Un million a million.

2nd, Distributive, as—

La moitié the half.  
Le quart the quarter.

3rd, Proportional, as—

Le double the double.  
Le triple the triple.  
Le centuple a hundredfold.

1st, As—

Una dozzina a dozen.  
Una ventina a score.  
Un milione a million.

2nd, As—

La metà the half.  
Il quarto the quarter.

3rd, As—

Il doppio the double.  
Il triplo the triple.  
Il centuplo a hundredfold.



## SPANISH.

### CARDINAL NUMBERS.

101. Ciento y uno  
102. Ciento y dos  
200. Dos cientos

### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Centésimo primo  
102nd. Centésimo segundo  
200th. Docentésimo

1,000. Mil  
10,000. Diez mil  
1,000,000. Millon

1,000th. Milésimo  
10,000th. Decimo milésimo

} Same.

1st, As—

Una docena  
Una veintena  
Un millon

a dozen.  
a score.  
a million.

2nd, As—

La mitad  
El cuarto

the half.  
the quarter.

3rd, As—

El doble  
El triple  
El centuplo

the double.  
the triple.  
a hundredfold.

Note a.—A million of reis is expressed by the word *conto*.

## PORTUGUESE.

### CARDINAL NUMBERS.

101. Cento e um  
102. Cento e dois  
200. Duzentos

### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Centesimo primeiro  
102nd. „ segundo  
200th. Ducentesimo

1,000. Mil  
10,000. Dez mil  
1,000,000. Milhão,  
(Note a.)

1,000th. Millesimo  
10,000th. Decimo millesimo

} Same.

1st, As—

Uma duzia  
Uma vintena  
Um milhão

a dozen.  
a score.  
a million.

2nd, As—

A metade  
O quarto

the half.  
the quarter.

3rd, As,

O duplo  
O triplo  
O centuplo

the double.  
the triple.  
hundredfold.



SPANISH.

The compound of "ciento" agrees in gender with its substantive in the same manner as any other adjective. } Same of "cento."

*Examples.*

Dos cientos hombres two hundred men.  
Trescientas mugeres three hundred women.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Duzentos homens two hundred men.  
Quatro centas meninas four hundred little girls.

"Mil," a thousand, is invariable, as in French.

*Examples.*

Dos mil, tres mil two, three thousand.

"Mil," a thousand, is invariable, as in French and Spanish.

*Examples.*

Dois mil, tres mil two, three thousand.

} Same.

} Same.

Days of the Month.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

El primero de Enero the first of January.  
Dos de Marzo the second of March.

*Examples.*

O primeiro de Maio the first of May.  
Tres de Agosto the third of August.

The word "de," of, being used as in Italian—not omitted, as in French. } Same.

## ADJECTIVES.

## "All" with Numeral.

## FRENCH.

55. "All," before a number, is rendered in French by "tous" with the definite Article.

*Examples.*

<i>Tous les quatre</i>	all four.
<i>Tous les six</i>	all six.
<i>Tous les huit</i>	all eight.

## ITALIAN.

"All," in Italian, takes the conjunction *e* (and), except before a vowel.

*Examples.*

<i>Tutti e quattro.</i>	all four.
<i>Tutti e sei</i>	all six.
<i>Tutti otto</i>	all eight.

## The Hour, &amp;c.

56. To denote the hour, the word "heure" is used for o'clock.

*Examples.*

<i>À une heure</i>	at one o'clock.
<i>À six heures</i>	at six o'clock.

In denoting the hour, the preposition *a* is combined with the article, and the word "*ora*" (hour) is understood.

*Examples.*

<i>All' una della mattina</i>	at one o'clock in the morning.
<i>Alle quattro della sera</i>	at four o'clock in the afternoon.

57. "Ago" is rendered in French by "il y a."

*Examples.*

<i>Il y a une semaine</i>	a week ago.
<i>Il y a cinq ans</i>	five years ago.

"Ago" is rendered by *fa* (makes), *è*, or *sono*.

*Examples.*

<i>Una settimana fa</i>	a week ago.
<i>Cinque anni sono.</i>	five years ago.

58. "This day month" is expressed by "dès aujourd'hui un mois."

"This day month" is rendered by "da oggi a un mese."

“All” with Numeral.

SPANISH.

“All,” in Spanish, before a number, is used with or without the article, as in English. } Same.

*Examples.*

*Todos cuatro*, or *todos los cuatro*      all four.  
*Todos seis*, or *todos los seis*            all six.  
*Todos ocho*, or *todos los ocho*          all eight.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Todos quatro*, or *todos os quatro*      all four.  
*Todos seis*, or *todos os seis*            all six.  
*Todos oito*, or *todos os oito*          all eight.

The Hour, &c.

In Spanish, the proposition *a* is used, but not joined to the article.

*Examples.*

A la una                                      one o'clock.  
A los dos de la tarde                      two o'clock in the evening.

“Ago” is rendered by “ha” (has) or “hace” (makes).

*Examples.*

Cuanto ha?                                  how long ago?  
Hace una semana                          a week ago.  
Hace algun tiempo                        some time ago.

“This day month” is rendered by “desde hoy en un mese.”

In denoting the hour, the Portuguese combine the preposition *a* with the article, as in Italian; but the word *hora* (hour) is generally expressed.

*Examples.*

As nove horas e meia do dia.  
At half-past nine o'clock in the day.

“Ago” is rendered by *ha* (has), or *faz* (makes).

*Examples.*

*Ha* muito tempo                          long ago.  
*Faz* hoje tres annos                      this day three years ago.

“This day month” is rendered by—*De hoje a um mez*, or *d'aqui a um mez*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Of Age.

## FRENCH.

59. In expressing "age," the verb "to have" is used } Same.  
 instead of "to be": as,

*J'avais sept ans*

I was seven years old.

## ITALIAN.

Io *aveva sett'* anni

I was seven years old.

## Once, Twice, &amp;c.

60. "Once," "twice," &c. have no equivalent words } Same.  
 in French, and are rendered by "one time," "two  
 times," &c.: as,

Une fois

once.

Una volta

due volte

tre volte.

Deux fois

twice.

Trois fois

thrice.

61. In writing "twenty-one," "thirty-one," &c., up  
 to "sixty-one," the French may either use the hyphen (-)  
 or the conjunction *and*, but not with twenty-two, &c.

*Examples.*

*Vingt-un*, or *vingt et un*; *trente-un*, or *trente et un*, &c.

"Uno" or "una" annexed to a number requires the  
 following substantive to be in the singular; but if the  
 definite article or the substantive should precede the  
 number, then the noun is used in the plural.

*Examples.*

*Ventuna libbra.*

twenty-one pounds (weight).

*Le ventuna libbre*, or *libbre ventuna.*

## Of Age.

SPANISH.

} Same : as,  
Yo *tenia* siete años      I was seven years old.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same : as,  
*Tenho* seis annos      I am six years old.

## Once, Twice, &amp;c.

} Same.  
Una vez      dos veces      tres veces.

} Same : as,  
Uma vez      duas vezes      tres vezes.

“Uno” drops the *o* when immediately before a noun masc.

“Um,” “uma,” one, is frequently written with an *h*, as hum, huma; but this letter is generally suppressed by modern writers.

*Example.*

*Un* caballo es bastante      one horse is enough.

“Ciento” drops the *to* before a noun of either gender, as *cien* hombres, *cien* mugeres.

The same may be said of “primero” and “tercero,” in regard to the letter *o*.

*Cem*, a hundred, is used before a noun, as *cem* livros, a hundred books; *cento* with other numerals.

## Concord of the Adjective with the Noun.

## FRENCH.

62. The adjective must agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it relates, by changing its termination in accordance with the rules already given. } Same.

*Examples.*

Le <i>bon</i> frère	the good brother.
La <i>bonne</i> mère	the good mother.
<i>Beaux</i> jardins	fine gardens.
<i>Belles</i> maisons	fine houses.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Il <i>buon</i> padre	the good father.
La <i>buona</i> madre	the good mother.
Dei <i>bei</i> giardini	fine gardens.
Delle <i>belle</i> donne	beautiful ladies.

63. Adjectives used adverbially are invariable—that is, they remain always in the masculine singular. } Same.

*Example.*

Ces dames parlent *bas*.  
Those ladies speak low.

*Example.*

Queste signore parlano *basso*.  
These ladies speak low.

64. An adjective qualifying two or more substantives *singular* of the same gender must be put in the *plural*, agreeing in gender. } Same.

*Example.*

La rose et la violette sont *belles*.  
The rose and the violet are beautiful.

*Example.*

La madre e la figlia sono *generose*.  
The mother and daughter are generous.



## Concord of the Adjective with the Noun.

SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Un hombre *rico* a rich man.  
 Una muger *rica* a rich woman.  
 Hombres *ricos* rich men.  
 Mugeres *ricas* rich women.

} Same.

*Example.*

Estas señoras hablan *alto*.  
 These ladies speak loud.

In Spanish, if the adjective is placed BEFORE the nouns, it is used in the singular; if AFTER, in the plural. } Same as French.

*Examples.*

El *merecido* premio y elogio.  
 The merited reward and praise.  
 El premio y elogio *merecidos*.  
 The reward and praise merited.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Um homem *rico* a rich man.  
 Uma mulher *rica* a rich woman.  
 Homens *ricos* rich men.  
 Mulheres *ricas* rich women.

} Same.

*Example.*

Estas senhoras fallão *baixo*.  
 These ladies speak low.

*Example.*

Sem caução ou fiança *idoneas* de valor.  
 Without caution or security of fit value.

## FRENCH.

65. If the substantives are of different genders the adjective must be in the masculine plural (Note *a.*) } Same.

*Example.*

Le lis et la rose sont *beaux*.  
The lily and the rose are beautiful.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

La sorella ed il fratello erano *contenti*.  
The sister and brother were pleased.

## Place of Adjectives.

Adjectives, in French, generally follow the noun; those, however, of only one syllable are most frequently placed first, such as "bon," "grand," &c.; also numeral adjectives, and some which, as explained in Note *b*, would convey a different meaning were they placed after the noun. Moreover, the position often depends upon the emphasis required to be expressed; therefore no absolute rules can be laid down. Those adjectives which ALWAYS follow the noun are here noted, viz.—

Italian adjectives may generally be placed either before or after their substantives; but there are some which *always follow*, being subject to the same rules as in the French language.

Note *a.*—*General.*—When the adjective *precedes* two or more nouns, it is usual in French to repeat it before each substantive with which it is made to agree in gender and number: as, Un bon père et une bonne mère. In the other languages, the adjective is not always repeated; but it is better to do so most frequently for the purpose of avoiding obscurity.

Note *b.*—In French and in the other languages, there are several adjectives which convey a different meaning according to their position before or after the substantive: as, Un *brave* homme—an *honest* man. Un homme *brave*—a *brave* man. A list, if attempted, would be very incomplete: the student will learn the right position as he advances in the language.

## SPANISH.

The adjective must be in the masc. gender and plural number if it follow the nouns; but if it precede it } Same.

*Examples.*

Su padre y madre *generosos*.  
His generous father and mother.  
Su *generosa* madre y padre.  
His generous mother and father.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Seu pai e mai *generosos*.  
His generous father and mother.  
Sua *generosa* mai e pai.  
His generous mother and father.

## Place of Adjectives.

Adjectives in Spanish *generally* follow their nouns; those which *always* come after agree with the same rules given for the French and Italian language.

Adjectives such as "many," "few," &c. are placed before their nouns.

With the exception of some adjectives which *always* precede the noun, as in the other languages, the position in Portuguese depends upon no fixed rule. The adjective perhaps most frequently *follows* the noun; but *euphony* is generally the best guide: as

Um servo publico de publicos deveres.  
A public servant of public duties.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

66. 1st, Those expressing names of nations (Note *a.*)*Example.*La révolution *française* the French revolution.

67. 2nd, Those denoting colour.

*Examples.*Des gants *noirs* black gloves.  
Des rubans *verts* green ribbons.

68. 3rd, Those formed from the past participle :

*Example.*Un homme *fatigué* a man fatigued.

69. 4th, Those expressing some natural or physical quality, as "heat," "cold," &amp;c. Also adjectives of form.

*Examples.*Un climat *chaud* a hot climate.  
Une chambre *carrée* a square room.

## ITALIAN.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun :  
1st, Same.*Example.*La rivoluzione *italiana* the Italian revolution.

2nd, Same:

*Examples.*Scarpe *verdi* green shoes.  
Inchiostro *rosso* red ink.

3rd, Same.

*Example.*Un uomo *istruito* a well-informed man.

4th, Same.

*Examples.*Tempo *umido* damp weather.  
Una camera *lunga* a long room.

Note *a.*—In all these languages, when an adjective denotes nationality, it does not require (as in English) a capital letter ; but when expressing the nation itself, the capital letter must always be used.

## SPANISH.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun.

1st, Same.

*Example.*

El governo *inglés*      the English government.

2nd, Same.

*Examples.*

Una casaca *negra*      a black coat.  
Terciopelo *azul*      blue velvet.

3rd, Same.

*Example.*

Un hombre *instruido*      a well-informed man.

4th, Same.

*Examples.*

Tiempo *húmedo*      damp weather.  
Una mesa *cuadrada*      a square table.

## PORTUGUESE.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun.

1st, Same.

*Example.*

As forças *francezas*      the French forces.

2nd, Same.

*Examples.*

Marroquim *verde*      green morocco.  
Em caracteres *encarnados*      in red letters.

3rd, Same.

*Example.*

Um homem *estimado*      an esteemed man.

4th, Same.

*Examples.*

Tempo *humido*      damp weather.  
Em forma *pyramidal*      in the form of a pyramid.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Adjectives of Dimension.

## FRENCH.

70. These are expressed in French as follows :

Un mur haut de six pieds.

A wall six feet high.

Une chambre longue de trente pieds ;

or, Une chambre de trente pieds de long, or, de longueur.

A room thirty feet long.

## ITALIAN.

The Italians express dimension as follows :

Un muro lungo venti piedi (without the preposition.)

A wall twenty feet long.

or, Una camera di venti piedi di lunghezza.

A room twenty feet long.

71. The French use the verb "to have" when expressing dimension, not the verb "to be," as in English. } Same.

*Example.*

Ce mur a six pieds de haut.

This wall is six feet high.

*Example.*

Questo muro ha venti piedi di altezza.

This wall is twenty feet high.

## Adjectives of Dimension.

## SPANISH.

The Spaniards express dimension as follows :

Un muro de veinte pies de largo (or, *de largura.*)

A wall twenty feet long.

Tres varas de ancho (or, *de anchura.*)

Three yards wide.

} Same.

*Example.*

La mesa *tiene* dos pies de altura.

The table is two feet high.

## PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese express dimension as follows :

Un muro de seis pés *de alto* (or, *de altura.*)

A wall six feet high.

Tres pés *de largo* (or, *de largura.*)

Three feet broad.

} Same.

*Example.*

A mesa *tem* tres pés de altura.

The table is three feet high.

## PRONOUNS.

*General Remark.*—Pronouns are classed under five different denominations, namely:—*Personal, Possessive, Demonstrative, Relative,* and *Indefinite.* A separate classification is unnecessary for *Interrogative* pronouns, as they are only a peculiar form of the *Relative.* In the following table the ablative case is not added, the pronoun

## Table of Personal Pronouns.

## FIRST PERSON.

		FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
Singular.			
Nom.	I	Je, moi.	Io.
Gen.	of me	de moi.	di me.
Dat.	to me	à moi, me.	a me, mi.
Acc.	me	me.	me, mi.
Plural.			
N.	We	Nous.	Noi.
G.	of us	de nous.	di noi.
D.	to us	à nous, nous.	a noi, ci.
Acc.	us	nous.	noi, ci.

## SECOND PERSON.

Singular.			
N.	Thou	Tu, toi.	Tu.
G.	of thee	de toi.	di te.
D.	to thee	à toi, te.	a te, ti.
Acc.	thee	te	te ; ti.



being the same as in the genitive, and the preposition which accompanies it varying according to the meaning expressed.

Table of Personal Pronouns.

FIRST PERSON.

SPANISH.

Yo.  
de mi.  
á mi, me.  
me, á mi.

Masc.

Nosotros  
de nosotros  
á nosotros nos, m. and f.  
á nosotros nos, m. and f.

Fem.

nosotras.  
de nosotras.  
á nosotras.  
á nosotras.

PORTUGUESE.

Eu.  
de mim.  
a mim ; me.  
me ; a mim.

Nós.  
de nós.  
a nós ; nos.  
a nós ; nos.

SECOND PERSON.

Tu.  
de ti.  
á ti ; te.  
te ; á ti.

Tu.  
de ti.  
a ti ; te.  
a ti ; te.

## PRONOUNS.

SECOND PERSON—*continued.*

## FRENCH.

Plural.	
N.	You
G.	of you
D.	to you
Acc.	you

Vous.  
de vous.  
à vous, vous.  
vous.

## ITALIAN.

Voi.  
di voi.  
a voi, vi.  
voi, vi.

## THIRD PERSON.

## Singular Masc.

N.	He
G.	of him
D.	to him
Acc.	him

Il, lui.  
de lui.  
à lui, lui.  
le.

Egli, ei, e'.  
di lui.  
a lui, gli.  
lui, lo, or il.

## Plural Masc.

N.	They
G.	of them
D.	to them
Acc.	them

Ils, eux.  
d'eux.  
leur, à eux.  
les.

Eglino.  
di loro.  
a loro.  
loro, gli, li.

## Singular Fem.

N.	She
G.	of her
D.	to her
Acc.	her

Elle.  
d'elle.  
lui, à elle.  
la.

Ella.  
di lei.  
a lei, le.  
lei, la.

SECOND PERSON—*continued.*

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Masc.	Fem.		
Vosotros	vosotras.	Vós.	
de vosotros	de vosotras.	de vós.	
á vosotros	á vosotras.	a vós ; vos.	
os, m. and f.		a vós ; vos.	
á vosotros	á vosotras.		
os, m. and f.			

THIRD PERSON.

Él.  
de él.  
á él, le.  
le, á él.

Ellos.  
de ellos.  
á ellos, les.  
los, á ellos.

Ella.  
de ella.  
á ella, le.  
la, á ella.

Elle.  
delle.  
a elle ; lhe.  
a elle ; o.

Elles.  
delles.  
a elles ; lhes.  
a elles ; os.

Ella.  
della.  
a ella ; lhe.  
a ella ; a.

## PRONOUNS.

THIRD PERSON—*continued.*

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
Plural Fem.			
N.	They	Elles.	Elleno.
G.	of them	d'elles.	di loro.
D.	to them	leur, à elles.	a loro.
Acc.	them	les.	loro, le.
<i>With or without a preposition.</i>		<i>Nominative, or used without a Preposition.</i>	<i>Accusative, and when with a Preposition.</i>
Myself	moi-même.	io stesso	me stesso.
Thyself	toi-même.	tu stesso	te stesso.
Himself	lui-même.	egli stesso	se stesso.
Herself	elle-même.	ella stessa	se stessa.
One's self	soi-même.	se stesso	
Ourselves	nous-mêmes.	noi stessi	noi stessi.
Yourselves	vous-mêmes.	voi stessi	voi stessi.
Themselves	{ soi-mêmes. eux-mêmes (m.) elles-mêmes (f.)	eglino stessi elleno stesse	se stessi. se stesse.

Se is used in the third person before a verb, as  
Il se flatte he flatters himself.

Si in Italian, as  
Si loda he praises himself.

THIRD PERSON—*continued.*

SPANISH.

Ellas.  
de ellas.  
á ellas, les.  
las, á ellas (Note *a*).

PORTUGUESE.

Ellas.  
dellas.  
a ellas ; lhes.  
a ellas ; as.

Nominative, or used  
*without a Preposition.*

Accusative, and when  
*with a Preposition.*

yo mismo  
tu mismo  
él mismo  
ella misma  
si mismo.

mi mismo.  
ti mismo.  
si mismo.  
si misma.

nosotros mismos (m.)	} Same.
nosotras mismas (f.)	
vosotros mismos (m.)	
vosotras mismas (f.)	

ellos mismos (m.)	} Same.
ellas mismas (f.)	

Nominative, or used  
*without a Preposition.*

Accusative, and used *when*  
*with a Preposition.*

eu mesmo  
tu mesmo  
elle mesmo  
ella mesma  
si mesmo.

mim mesmo.  
ti mesmo.  
si mesmo.  
si mesma.

nós mesmos (m.)	nós mesmas (f.)
-----------------	-----------------

vós mesmos (m.)	vós mesmas (f.)
-----------------	-----------------

elles mesmos (m.)  
ellas mesmas (f.)

Se in Spanish, as

Se aplaude

he praises himself.

Se in Portuguese, as

Elle se ama

he loves himself.

Note *a.*—The Spanish language has also a *neuter* pronoun, *lo* or *ello*, used in the singular number only.

## PRONOUNS.

## Personal Pronouns.

## Nominative Case.

## FRENCH.

72. Personal pronouns in the nominative case are always expressed in French, differing in this respect from Italian and other languages.

*Examples.*

Je parle	I speak.
Tu parles	thou speakest.
Il boit	he drinks.
Elle chante	she sings.
Nous donnons	we give.
Vous dansez	you dance.
Ils or elles dorment	they sleep.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, personal pronouns are generally omitted in the nominative, except for the sake of emphasis or to avoid ambiguity. They are given here in order to show the agreement of the verb.

*Examples.*

Io parlo	I speak.
Tu canti	thou singest.
Egli beve	he drinks.
Ella balla	she dances.
Noi diamo	we give.
Voi cantate	you sing.
Eglio or elleno sono	they are.

73. In sentences which are interrogative the pronoun usually follows the verb. } Same, when expressed.

*Examples.*

Êtes-vous persuadé ?	are you persuaded ?
Est-il heureux ?	is he happy ?

*Examples.*

Avete voi il libro ?	have you the book ?
Possiamo noi entrare ?	may we enter ?

Personal Pronouns.

Nominative Case.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Yo he visto	I have seen.
Tu has venido	thou hast come.
Él habla	he speaks.
Ella condena	she condemns.
Nosotros somos	we are.
Vosotros temeis	you fear.
Ellos, ellas, han	they have.

*Examples.*

<i>Eu</i> cumpro	I accomplish.
<i>Tu</i> mandas	thou orderest.
<i>Elle</i> falla	he speaks.
<i>Ella</i> come	she eats.
<i>Nós</i> temos amado	we have loved.
<i>Vós</i> amais	you love.
<i>Elles ; ellas</i> são	they are.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

¿No es <i>ella</i> mi hermana ?	is she not my sister ?
¿Estan <i>ellos</i> aqui ?	are they here ?

*Examples.*

Quantos filhos tem <i>ella</i> ?	how many children has she ?
Que idade tem <i>elle</i> ?	how old is he ?

## FRENCH.

74. *Moi, toi, lui, eux* (m.), *elles* (f.) are employed in the following instances:—

1st, When in answer to a question.

2d, When coming after a comparative.

3d, When joined by a conjunction to a noun or pronoun.

4th, When followed by *qui, que, seul*, or a participle present.

5th, When following *It is, it was, &c.*

*Examples.*

*Qui* frappe à la porte ?

(Who knocks at the door ?) *Moi.*

*Je* suis plus riche que *lui.*

I am richer than he.

*Ma* sœur et *moi.*

My sister and I.

*Moi* qui suis son frère.

I who am his brother.

*Lui* seul l'a fait.

He alone has done it.

*Eux* voyant que la chose était inutile.

They seeing the thing was useless.

C'est *moi.*

It is I.

## ITALIAN.

The Italians, in all these instances, use the pronouns *io, tu, &c.*, except after a comparison, because then the pronoun is governed by a preposition.

*Examples.*

*Chi* ha fatto questo ?

(Who has done this ?) *Io* (I.)

*Mia* sorella ed *Io* (m.) siamo più ricchi di *lui.*

My sister and I are richer than he.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

In Spanish the pronouns *yo, tu, &c.*, are here employed without exception.

Same of *eu, tu, &c.*

*Examples.*

¿ Quien llama á la puerta? *Yo.*  
 Who knocks at the door? *I.*  
 El es mas joven que *tu.*  
 He is younger than thou.

*Examples.*

Quem é? *Eu.*  
 Who is it? *I.*  
 Elle é mais rico que *tu.*  
 He is richer than thou.

## FRENCH.

75. "Tu," thou, is employed in addressing relations and friends with whom we are very intimate. It can also be used by a master to his servant, and in any case where inferiority is distinctly acknowledged; likewise, as a mark of contempt. In all other instances "vous" is employed; as

Comment *vous portez-vous* Madame? (or Messieurs.)  
How do you do, Madam? (or Gentlemen.)

76. When "vous" is not made use of in a plural sense, the adjective or participle is put in the singular number, and agrees in gender with the person addressed.

*Examples.*

(Addressing a man)	Vous êtes étonné. You are astonished.
( " a woman)	Vous êtes estimée. You are esteemed.

## ITALIAN.

The second person singular is used by the Italians in the same manner as "tu" in French, but when addressing a superior, or one with whom they are not familiar, they use the third person, as follows:

Come sta *ella*?  
How do you do, Sir? (or Madam.)  
(applicable to either lady or gentleman.)  
Come stanno *le loro Signorie*?  
How do you do, Gentlemen? (or Ladies.)

In Italian the adjective and participle agree with the title.

*Example.*

É *ella* soddisfatta?  
Are you, Sir, or Madam, satisfied?

---

The rules which direct the use of personal pronouns in the nominative case having been given, we will now, before proceeding to those of the dative and accusative cases, offer some remarks on what is usually found somewhat difficult in the study of foreign languages—namely, the right application of pronouns as *direct* and *indirect*

SPANISH.

Same as regards second person.

The Spaniards in formal conversation use "*usted*," abbrev. of *vuestra merced* (your worship), and in the plural "*ustedes*": they apply to both genders, the verb and possessive pronoun being both put in the third person, as—

- ¿ Este es *su* libro de Vmd. Señora ?  
Is this your book, Madam ?
- ¿ Como estan Vmds. Señores ?  
How do you do, Gentlemen ?

*Remark.*—"Usted" is contracted in writing thus, Vmd., and an *s* is added for the plural.

The adjective and participle agree, as in French, with the person addressed, *not*, as in Italian, with the title.

*Example.*

- ¿ Está *buena*, Señora ?  
Are you well, Madam ?

PORTUGUESE.

Same as regards second person singular and plural.

The Portuguese, in formal conversation, use the words *Vossa Mercê* (Note *a.*) (your worship): they apply to both genders, the verb and possessive pronoun being both put in the third person, as in Spanish.

*Examples.*

- Como estão *vmces.* ?      How do you do ?  
(applicable to gentlemen or ladies.)
- Que idade tem *seu* irmão ?      How old is your brother ?

*Remark.*—The abbreviation is—*V.*, *Vm.*, or *Vmces.*, plural, *Vmces.*

} Same.

*Example.*

- A senhora está boa ?  
Are you well, madam ?

---

*objects*, or *regimens* of the verb. A little attention bestowed upon this subject at the outset will materially assist the learner. The pronoun is in the *accusative* case when governed by the verb without a preposition either expressed or understood, as, I love him—*je l'aime*. The action of the verb here falls *immediately* on the

*Note a.*—Pronounced familiarly thus : *vossmessay*, also *vossay*.

## PRONOUNS.

pronoun *him*, which therefore becomes the *direct object*. The pronoun is the *indirect object* when it admits of a preposition expressed or understood, and another word in the sentence receives the direct action of the verb, as, "I gave him the pen—Io gli detti la penna." In this case the pen was given *to* him, the preposition *to* being understood, consequently the pronoun *him* is put in the *dative* case. Another example: "I wrote to her—Yo le escribí,"—*her* is in the *dative* case, because *something* written *to* her is understood. It may be noted here that the Spaniards and Portuguese frequently add a preposition and another pronoun to do away with any ambiguity when the indirect regimen, as in the last example, can convey two different meanings; *le* in the dative is the

## Accusative Case.

## FRENCH.

77. Personal Pronouns in the accusative case, or, in other words, as *direct* objects of the verb, are thus expressed in French:

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, thus—

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

me            me

us            nous

me            mi

us            ci

thee          te

you          vous

thee          ti

you          vi

him          le

them        les

him          lo or il

them (m.) li, gli

her          la

m. and f.

her          la

them (f.) le

and are placed before the verb in simple tenses, and } Same.  
before the auxiliary in compound tenses.

same in both genders, to distinguish which it is more correct to say, "Yo le escribí á ella—I wrote to her," "Yo le escribí á él—I wrote to him." Were the English words "I give him" literally translated into any of the foreign languages here treated—for instance, je le donne—they would mean that the man himself is actually given, and not that *something* understood is given to him. This shows the great importance of studying the distinction between personal pronouns as *direct* objects in the *accusative* case, and as *indirect* objects in the *dative* case.

Accusative Case.

SPANISH.

In Spanish thus :

PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese thus :

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		SINGULAR.				PLURAL.	
me	me	á mi	us	{ nos (m. and f.) á nosotros (m.) á nosotras (f.)	me	me	a mim	us	nos	a nós	(Note a.)
thee	te	á ti	you		{ os (m. and f.) á vosotros (m.) á vosotras (f.)	thee	te	a ti	you	vos	
him	le	á él	them (m.)	los	á ellos	him	o	a elle	them (m.)	os	a elles
her	la	á ella	them (f.)	las	á ellas	her	a	a ella	them (fem.)	as	a ellas
} Same.				} They are placed sometimes before and as frequently after the verb.							

Note a.—Observe that nos and vos, in the accusative case, are written without the accent, which they always take in the nominative, and after prepositions.

## PRONOUNS.

FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Il *me* connaît.  
 He knows me.  
 Vous ne la *verrez* pas.  
 You will not see her.  
 Ils *nous* ont flattés.  
 They have flattered us.  
 Ne *les* connaissez-vous pas ?  
 Do you not know them ?

ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli *mi* domanda.  
 He asks for me.  
 Non *la* sorprenderete.  
 You will not surprise her.  
*Ci* hanno ingannati.  
 They have deceived us.  
 Non *li* conoscete ?  
 Do you not know them ?

## Dative Case.

Personal pronouns in the dative case, or in other words, as *indirect* objects of the verb, are as follows: } Same.

78. (When the preposition is understood.)

me	me	us	nous
thee	te	you	vous
him	lui	} them	leur
her	lui		

*Examples.*

Il *me* parle            he speaks to me.  
 Je *lui* donne        I give to him.  
 Nous *leur* écrirons    we will write to them.

(Preposition understood.)

me	mi	us	ci
thee	ti	you	vi
him	gli	} them	le
her	le		

*Examples.*

Egli *mi* parla        he speaks to me.  
 Io *gli* scriverò      I will write to him.  
*Ci* parlano            they speak to us.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Estos versos *me* inspiraron.  
 These verses inspired me.  
*Te* amo mucho.  
 I love thee much.  
 Algo *os* ha impulsado á venir.  
 Something has impelled you to come.  
 Yo *los* tengo aqui.  
 I have them here.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

O Céu *vos* guarde.  
 Heaven preserve you.  
 Conheço-*a* de nome.  
 I know her by name.  
 Como! já *nos* deixa?  
 What! do you leave us already?  
 Eu *as* darei ao gravador.  
 I will give them to the engraver.

Dative Case.

} Same.

} Same.

(Preposition understood.)

me	me	us	nos
thee	te	you	os
him	} le	{ them	les
her			

*Examples.*

*Te* diré I will tell thee.  
 No *os* debo nada I owe you nothing.  
 El *les* da alguna cosa he gives them something.

(Preposition understood.)

me	me	us	nos
thee	te	you	vos
him	} lhe	them	} elhes
her			

*Examples.*

Que *vos* havia dado o conde.  
 Which the count had given you.  
 Nada *lhe* posso dizer.  
 I can say nothing to him (or her.)

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

79. (When the preposition is expressed.)

To me	à moi	To us	à nous
„ thee	à toi	„ you	à vous
„ him	à lui	„ them (m.)	à eux
„ her	à elle	„ them (f.)	à elles

*Example.*

Adressez-vous à moi      address yourself to me.

## ITALIAN.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	a me	To us	a noi
„ thee	a te	„ you	a voi
„ him	a lui	„ them	} a loro
„ her	a lei	m. and f.	

*Example.*

Scriverò a lei      I will write to her.

## With the Infinitive Mood.

80. In French the personal pronoun is placed before a verb in the infinitive.

The pronoun is placed after the infinitive, which then suppresses its final *e* or *re* when the verb ends in *re*.

*Examples.*

Je vais *le* voir      I am going to see him.  
Il faut *les* vaincre      We must conquer them.

*Examples.*

Possiamo *parlargli*      we can speak to him.  
Voglio *condurla*      I wish to conduct her.

When the pronoun is employed with two verbs it can be placed either next to the one that governs it, or it may be separated from it. The former, however, is preferable. } Same.



SPANISH.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	à mi	To us	á nosotros, á nosotras (f.)
„ thee	á ti	„ you	á vosotros, á vosotras
„ him	á él	„ them (m.)	á ellos
„ her	á ella	„ them (f.)	á ellas

*Example.*

No dirás nada á él      thou shalt say nothing to him.

PORTUGUESE.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	a mim	To us	a nós
„ thee	a ti	„ you	a vós
„ him	a elle	„ them (m.)	a elles
„ her	a ella	„ „ (f.)	a ellas

*Example.*

Falla a vós      he speaks to you.

With the Infinitive Mood.

In Spanish also the pronoun is placed after the verb in the infinitive, and is joined to it.

The Portuguese pronoun is placed either *before* or *after* the infinitive, to which, in the latter case, it is united by a hyphen. If put *before* the infinitive, the pronoun is joined by a hyphen to the verb which precedes.

*Examples.*

Para enseñarme      to instruct me.  
Sin *haberos* dado      without having given you.

*Examples.*

Devo-*vos* dizer.  
I ought to tell you.  
Vindo *visita-la* (Note *a*) e *conhecê-la*.  
Coming to visit and become acquainted with her.

} Same.

} both. The pronoun with two verbs may also precede them

Note *a*.—The final *r* of the verb is suppressed when the infinitive is followed by the pronouns *elle*, *ella*, *elles*, *ellas*, and these are changed into *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*. Some writers place an accent on the vowel before the *r* which is dropped: *vê-lo* (to see him, being a contraction of *ver-elle*.)

## PRONOUNS.

FRENCH.

*Examples.*

On peut *les vaincre* }  
 or, On *les* peut vaincre } We can conquer them.

ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Voglio parlargli }  
 or, *Gli* voglio parlare } I wish to speak to him.

## With the Imperative Mood.

81. Personal pronouns, whether *direct* or *indirect*, accompanied by a verb in the imperative mood, (except in the third persons singular and plural,) are placed immediately after the verb when employed affirmatively. } Same.

The pronoun, in such a case, is joined to the verb by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Suivons-*les* let us follow them.  
 Dites-*moi* tell me.  
 Sauve-*toi* save thyself.

Observe that in the above instances *moi* and *toi* instead of *me* and *te* are used; but when followed by *en*, they are written *m'*, *t'*, as

Donnez-*m'en* give me some.

In Italian the pronoun is joined to the verb when following it.

*Examples.*

Dammi give me.  
 Mandateci send us.  
 Permettetemi allow me.

*Remark.*—When a verb ends in a vowel accented, or has only one syllable, the initial letter of the pronoun is doubled, as *Dammi* (give me), *parlommi* (he spoke to me). “*Gli*” is excepted, as *Digli* (tell him).

82. When the imperative is *negatively* employed, the pronoun precedes the verb. } Same.

*Example.*

*Ne me* dites *pas* cela ! do not tell me that !

*Example.*

*Non ci* mandate via do not send us away.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Voy á darle el libro  
or, *Le* voy á dar el libro.  
I am going to give him the book.

PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

Depois de *lhe* ter feito atravessar os jardins.  
After having made him pass through the gardens.

With the Imperative Mood.

} Same.

} Same as Italian.

*Examples.*

*Dime* con quien andas. Tell me with whom thou goest.  
*Dejadme salir.* Let me go out.  
*Salvemonos.* Let us save ourselves.

*Remark.*—When *nos* and *vos* are joined to the verb in the first and second persons plural, the final letter of the verb is suppressed, as above.

} Same.

*Example.*

*No nos* desanimemos Let us not be discouraged.

} Same.

The pronoun is joined to the verb by a hyphen, as in French.

*Examples.*

<i>Deixa-me</i>	leave me.
<i>Dai-me azeite</i>	give me some oil.
<i>Faça-nos uma salada</i>	make us a salad.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Não me* toque do not touch me.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

83. When two pronouns accompany the imperative, one in the accusative or direct, the other in the dative or indirect object, the accusative is put first when used affirmatively, and second in a negative sentence, *except* with the third person as an indirect regimen.

*Examples.*

Donnez- <i>le-moi</i>	give it me.
Dites- <i>le-leur</i>	tell it to them.
Ne <i>me le</i> donnez pas.	do not give it me.
Ne <i>le leur</i> dites pas	do not tell it to them.

## ITALIAN.

The Italian rule differs, the dative or indirect regimen being always placed first.

*Examples.*

Datemi <i>lo</i>	give it me.
Mandatemi <i>glielo</i>	send it to him.
Non <i>me lo</i> date	do not give it to me.
Non <i>glielo</i> mandate	do not send it to him.

*Remark.*—Both the pronouns are put after the imperative verb in affirmative, and before in negative sentences. } Same.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same as Italian.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Vuelvemelos.  
 Return them to me.  
 Enséñeselos (Note a).  
 Show them to him, (her, or them).  
 No me los vuelve.  
 Do not return them to me.  
 No se los enseñe.  
 Do not show them to him.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Dai-mo give it to me.  
 Dai-mos give them to me.

*Remark.*—Mo and mos are contractions of *me o* and *me os*, as explained further on.

} Same.

Note a.—When two pronouns in Spanish follow each other as above, *se* is used for the *indirect* regimen in the *third person singular* or *plural*: this is to avoid unpleasant repetition of sound.

## PRONOUNS.

## It, They, Them.

## FRENCH.

84. As French nouns denoting inanimate objects are either of the masculine or feminine gender (having no neuter), it follows that the pronouns relating to them, and which in English are expressed by it, they, them, must be the same as those employed for persons—viz., il, elle, and plurals, as subjects, le, la, les, as direct objects, or in the accusative case. In answer to the question, *Où est le livre ?* (where is the book ?) the French reply, *Il est sur la table* (it is on the table)—*livre* being masculine. But when asked, *Où est la plume ?* (where is the pen ?) the answer is, *Elle est ici, donnez-la-moi* (it is here, give it to me)—*plume* being feminine.

85. Great caution must be used in the employment of these pronouns : they assume the same gender and number as the substantives to which they relate when the noun is determined in a phrase ; for instance, *Êtes vous la reine ?* (are you *the* queen ?)—*Je la suis* (I am)—meaning some particular queen. But if the question be, *Êtes vous reine ?*—meaning *a* queen—the reply is, *Je le suis*.

## ITALIAN.

Same rule applies with regard to *lo, la, li, le, and ne*, in the accusative ; but the nominative need not be expressed.

*Examples.*

Dov' è il libro ?	where is the book ?
È sulla tavola	it is on the table.
We can say, however, <i>Egli è vero</i>	} it is true.
or, <i>è vero</i>	

The Italians would answer to similar questions, "*Lo sono,*" "*noi lo siamo,*" &c., and employ the pronoun "*lo*" also in reference to something of which the gender is not denoted, as "*Io lo so* (I know it).

It, They, Them.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

Same of *el, la, lo, los, las*, in the accusative. The nominative need not be expressed, as in Italian.

Same of *o, a, os, as* (Note *a*), in the accusative. These, when accompanied by the pronouns *me, te, lhe, lhes* (indirect regimens), are thus used:—

*Mo, ma, mos, mas*, instead of *me o, me a, me os, me as*, or *m'o, &c.*

*To, ta, tos, tas*, instead of *te o, te a, te os, te as*, or *t'o, &c.*

*Lho, lha, lhs, lhas*, instead of *lhe o, lhe a, lhe os, lhe as*.

That is, the pronoun in the oblique case drops the *e*, and is joined to the accusative: *Nos* and *vos* change the *s* into *l*, as *Nolo, vola, nolos, &c.*

The same of the Spanish, who also employ the pronoun "*lo*," as "*Yo lo creo*" (I think it); "*Ya lo sabia*" (I knew it already).

Same of the Portuguese, who employ the pronoun *O*, as, *Eu o entendo*; or, *Entendo-o* (I understand so.)

When two or more pronouns accompany a verb in a simple tense, the *nominative* should be *expressed* if they are placed *before* the verb, but may be omitted when following: as,

*Eu to darei, or darei-to*      I will give it thee.

Note *a*.—The pronouns *o, a, os, as*, after a verb in the third person plural ending in *o*, take the letter *n* for the sake of euphony: as, *amão-no*—they love it (or him.) The preterite definite of *fazer* (to make) is thus changed, *eu fi-lo*; *elle fê-lo*; *fizemo-lo* (I, he, we did it,) instead of *eu fiz-o, &c.* *Eis* (behold) thus: *ei-lo, ei-la, &c.* Verbs ending in *r, s, or z*, often change these letters into *l* before the pronoun, for the sake of euphony.

## FRENCH.

Again : Etes vous *les* hommes ? (are you *the* men ?)  
 nous *les* sommes.  
 Etes vous *des* hommes ? (are you men ?)  
 nous *le* sommes.

When *le* is invariable it is equivalent to *so* or *it* in English.

Je *le* crois                    I believe *so*.  
 Je *le* sais                      I know *it*.

## ITALIAN.

86. The particle "y" is of very frequent use, expressing "to" or "of it," "of them," &c. Some of its various applications will be seen by the following } The Italians frequently use *ci* and *vi* in similar instances.

*Examples.*

J'*y* pense ; j'*y* consens.  
 I am thinking *of it* ; I consent *to it*.  
 N'*y* faites pas attention.  
 Pay no attention *to it*.  
 On va *y* répondre ; or, On *y* va répondre.  
 They are going to answer *it*.  
 Prenez cette lettre et *y* mettez un cachet.  
 Take this letter and put a seal *upon it*.  
 Il *y* va de ma vie.  
 It is as much as my life is worth.

*Examples.*

Mi *ci* sono al fine risoluto.  
 I am at last resolved *upon it*.  
 Non *vi* è remedio.  
 There is no remedy *for it*.  
 Non è via da *uscirci*.  
 There is no way of getting out *of it*.

Note.—As a rule, *y* is used only in relation to *things* ; but some of the best French writers, and amongst them Madame de Sévigné and Racine, employ it also in relation to persons.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

The Spaniards have no corresponding word, but make use of the usual pronoun with a preposition: for instance,—

“*J’y pense*,” which in French means, “I am thinking of it,” is translated into Spanish, “*Pienso en ello*.” Again, “*Fiez-vous-y*” (trust in him), is rendered by “*Fiese vd. de él*.”

Same: for, “I am thinking of it,” a Portuguese would say, *Penso nisso* (em isso).

## FRENCH.

87. Of or by him, her, &c., and some, are often expressed by the pronoun "en," which is of both genders and numbers.

*Examples.*

Il faut <i>en</i> parler	it is necessary to speak <i>of it</i> .
Vous pouvez <i>en</i> profiter	you may profit <i>by it</i> .
J'aime trop la valeur pour <i>en</i> être jaloux	I love courage too much to be jealous of it.
Il <i>en</i> était chéri, or Il était chéri <i>d'eux</i>	} he was beloved by them.
Allez-vous- <i>en</i>	

## ITALIAN.

"Ne" is employed by the Italians in like manner.

*Examples.*

Questa signorina vi piace, *ne* parlate frequentemente.  
This young lady pleases you, you speak of her frequently.

Quella malattia é pericolosa *ne* potrebbe morire.  
That complaint is dangerous, he might die of it.

Parlate di moneta : *ne* avete? Si *ne* ho.  
You speak of money : have you any? Yes, I have some.

Andatevene.  
Go away.

SPANISH.

{ The same remarks as to preceding rule apply here. }  
 { The Spaniards would write, de él, en ello, or esto, &c. } Same.

*Examples.*

Me alegro *de ello*.

I am glad of it.

Me admiro *de esto*.

I wonder at it.

Quero *d'isso*.

Lembro-me *delle*.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

I wish some of this.

I remember it (or, am mindful of it.)

## PRONOUNS.

## Possessive Pronouns.

The usual but, strictly speaking, incorrect system of calling the words *my, thy, his, her, our, your, their*, possessive *pronouns*, will be adopted in this work for the sake of convenience. Bescherelle frères, in their "Grammaire Nationale," place under the heading of "possessive pronouns" *mine, thine, &c.*; correctly separating from this classification *my, thy, &c.*, which they, with a few other grammarians, denominate "possessive adjectives," the latter always accompanying a noun expressed, whilst the words *mine, thine, &c.*, stand in the place of a noun, conveying at the same time the idea of the object expressed, and to whom it belongs: they are, therefore, to all

## Conjunctive.

FRENCH.				ITALIAN.				
SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	Fem.	Both genders.		Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
Mon	ma	Mes	my	Il mio	la mia	I miei	le mie	my
ton	ta	tes	thy	Il tuo	la tua	I tuoi	le tue	thy
son	sa	ses	his, her, its	Il suo	la sua	I suoi	le sue	his, her, its
notre	notre	nos	our	Il nostro	la nostra	I nostri	le nostre	our
votre	votre	vos	your	Il vostro	la vostra	I vostri	le vostre	your
leur	leur	leurs	their	Il loro	la loro	I loro	le loro	their

(Note a.)

Note a.—Sometimes the best writers dispense with the article before a possessive pronoun. Boccaccio says: "ho fatto *mie* piccole mercatanzie"—I have made my little traffic; and Dante writes, "matto è chi spera che *nostra* ragione," &c.—he is mad who expects that our reason, &c.

Before a noun of title or kindred in the *singular* number, possessive pronouns (except *loro*) drop the article: as, *dov'è vostro fratello?*—where is your brother? Should an adjective or other word intervene, or the noun be a diminutive, such as *fratellino*, the article is used.

## Possessive Pronouns.

intents and purposes, pronouns. We will, however, distinguish the two classes by naming the first "Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive" and the last "Possessive Pronouns Disjunctive." It may also be here remarked, that the French, Italians, and others, contrary to the English, make the pronouns agree with the thing possessed, as "*sa maison*," which words, isolated, mean either *his* or *her* house; but the context shows the gender of the possessor.

The Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive are as follows:—

## Conjunctive

SPANISH.		SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.		PORTUGUESE.			
SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		SINGULAR.		PLURAL.			
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.		
Mi	mi	Mis	mis	my	Meu	minha	Meus	minhas	my
tu	tu	tus	tus	thy	teu	tua	teus	tuas	thy
su	su	sus	sus	his, her, its, their	seu	sua	seus	suas	his, her, their
nuestro	nuestra	nuestros	nuestras	our	nosso	nossa	nossos	nossas	our
vuestro	vuestra	vuestros	vuestras	your	vosso	vossa	vossos	vossas	your
su	su	sus	sus	his, &c., or their	seu	sua	seus	suas	his, her, their

## FRENCH.

88. The equivalents of my, thy, &c., agree in gender and number with the substantives to which they relate. } Same.  
The following examples will show their application.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Mon père	my father
Ta mère	thy mother
Son attention	his or her attention
Leur enfant	their child
Notre fortune	our fortune

## PLURAL.

Nos frères	our brothers
Vos sœurs	your sisters
Ses bontés	his favours
Leurs voitures	their carriages
Leurs richesses	their riches

Observe that before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, *mon*, *ton*, *son*, are used for the sake of euphony, whatever may be the gender of the noun.—  
(Note *a.*)

Note *a.*—The possessive pronoun *leur*, which takes an *s* in the plural, must not be confounded with the personal pronoun, which is invariable.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Il mio coltello	my knife
La tua casa	thy house
Il suo baule	his trunk
La loro tavola	their table

## PLURAL.

I miei amici	my friends
Le vostre cortine	your curtains
I suoi letti	his beds
Le loro tavole	their tables

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

In Spanish, these pronouns, except *nuestro* and *vuestro*, are common to both genders. They all add *s* for the plural. } Same as French.

*Examples.*

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

SINGULAR.

Mi casa	my house
Tu sombrero	thy hat
Su memoria	his memory
Nuestro libro	our book
Vuestra madre	your mother
Su valor	their courage

Minha mai	my mother
teu pai	thy father
sua mobilia	his furniture
nosso amigo	our friend
vosso dever	your duty
sua desgraça	their misfortune

PLURAL.

PLURAL.

Mis libros	my books
Tus virtudes	thy virtues
Sus hijos	his sons
Nuestras casas	our houses
Vuestros sombreros	your hats
Sus costumbres	their habits

Meus livros	my books
tuas casas	thy houses
seus paraforos	his screens
nossos amigos	our friends
vossos deveres	your duties
suas desgraças	their misfortunes

*Remark.*—When employing *su* or *sus* a personal pronoun is frequently added in the genitive case, by which all doubt as to the possessor will be avoided, as *su libro de ella*, her book. } Same; as *seu livro della*, her book.

## FRENCH.

89. These pronouns accompanying two or more substantives should be repeated before each, although this rule is not always adhered to.

*Example.*

*Son* frère et *sa* sœur (his brother and sister)  
is more general and more correct than *ses* frère et sœur.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian they are always repeated before each noun.

*Example.*

*Mio* padre, *mia* madre, ed *i miei* fratelli sono venuti  
My father, my mother, and my brothers have come.

90. When a pronoun is employed with two adjectives qualifying the same noun, and both having an analogous meaning, it need not be repeated. } Same.

*Examples.*

Nos sages et doctes pères.  
Our wise and learned fathers.  
Son bon et digne ami.  
His good and worthy friend.

*Examples.*

*Il mio* dotto e saggio padre.  
My learned and wise father.  
*Il mio* buono ed eccellente amico.  
My good and excellent friend.



## SPANISH.

The Spaniards more frequently than not repeat the pronoun. As in English, however, they are guided by the emphasis required. It is better, as a rule, when the first noun is in the singular number and the second in the plural, to repeat the pronoun, making it agree, of course, with its noun; also when the nouns are of different genders.

Same.

*Examples.*

Ha perdido *su* padre, *su* madre y *sus* hermanos.  
He has lost his father, his mother, and his brothers.  
Observaba mucho todos *mis* pasos palabras y movimientos.  
He observed much all my steps, words, and movements.  
Para llevar *mi* ropa y *mis* ducados.  
To carry my clothes and my dollars.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*Mi* sabio é (Note *a*) inteligente hermano.  
My wise and intelligent brother.  
*Mi* útil y ventajosa compra.  
My useful and advantageous purchase.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Todos os povos das provincias tinham *sua* cidade, *seu* centro.  
All the people of the provinces had their city, their centre.  
Vio morrer todos *os seus* filhos, netos e contemporaneos.  
His sons, grandsons, and contemporaries, he saw them all die.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*Meu* sabio e inteligente irmão.  
My wise and intelligent brother.  
*Seu* bom e digno amigo.  
His good and worthy friend.

## FRENCH.

91. The article instead of a possessive pronoun is used when a personal pronoun in the same sentence clearly indicates the possessor. } Same.

*Examples.*

*J'ai mal à la tête*      my head aches.  
*Il a les yeux rouges*      he has red eyes.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Si ruppe il braccio*      he broke his arm.  
*Mettiti il capello*      put on thy hat.  
*Cavatevi le scarpe*      take off your shoes.

92. The French in such phrases as "A friend of mine," "a book of yours," express their meaning by

Un de mes amis.  
 Un de vos livres.

The Italians say—

Un mio amico ; or, uno de' miei amici.  
 Un vostro libro ; or, uno dei vostri libri.

93. In speaking to a person of his relations, they say,

Monsieur votre père.  
 Madame votre mère, &c.

{ The pronoun in Italian precedes the title, and takes an article as a word intervenes between it and the noun, as

Il vostro signor padre.  
 La vostra signora madre, &c.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Me duele *la* cabeza      my head aches.  
 Él se ha roto *la* pierna      he has broken his leg.

The Spanish say—

Un amigo mio.  
 Un libro vuestro.

} Here they employ the third person, and say—

Su señor padre.  
 Su señora madre.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Dóe-me *a* garganta.  
 My throat aches.  
 Fará Vm. bem de metter *os* pés em agua quente.  
 You will do well to put your feet in hot water.

The Portuguese say—

Um dos meus amigos.  
 Um dos vossos livros.

} Same : as,

O senhor seu pai.  
 A senhora sua mai.

## Disjunctive.

## FRENCH.

The following is a list of these pronouns :—

SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.
Le mien	la mienne (mine).
Le tien	la tienne (thine).
Le sien	la sienne (his, hers, its).
Le nôtre (Note a)	la nôtre (ours).
Le vôtre	la vôtre (yours).
Le leur	la leur (theirs).

PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.
Les miens	les miennes.
Les tiens	les tiennes.
Les siens	les siennes.
Les nôtres	} for both genders.
Les vôtres	
Les leurs	

94. These pronouns agree in gender and number with } Same.  
the *object possessed*.

*Examples.*

Un cheval comme <i>le mien</i>	a horse like mine.
Une main comme <i>la sienne</i>	a hand like his.
Nos amis et <i>les vôtres</i>	our friends and yours.
Vos livres et <i>les leurs</i>	your books and theirs.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian the same as the "Conjunctive," which serve for either my or mine :—

SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.
Il mio	la mia (mine).
Il tuo	la tua (thine).
Il suo	la sua (his, hers, its).
Il nostro	la nostra (ours).
Il vostro	la vostra (yours).
Il loro	la loro (theirs).

PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.
I miei	le mie.
I tuoi	le tue.
I suoi	le sue.
I nostri	le nostre.
I vostri	le vostre.
I loro	le loro.

*Examples.*

Il mio cavallo ed <i>il vostro</i>	my horse and yours.
Mia sorella e <i>la vostra</i>	my sister and yours.
Le sue case e <i>le nostre</i>	his houses and ours.
I suoi libri ed <i>i loro</i>	his books and theirs.

Note a.—Observe that *nôtre* and *vôtre*, preceded by the article, take a circumflex accent.

## Disjunctive.

## SPANISH.

The Spanish are as follows :

		SINGULAR.	
		Masc.	Fem.
Add the Article.	Mio		mia (mine).
	Tuyo		tuya (thine).
	Suyo		suya (his, hers, its).
	Nuestro		nuestra (ours).
	Vuestro		vuestra (yours).
	Suyo		suya (theirs).
		PLURAL.	

The plural is formed by simply adding *s* to the singular.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Vuestro caballo y <i>el mio</i>	your horse and mine.
Su hermana y <i>la vuestra</i>	his sister and yours.
Mis criados y <i>los vuestros</i>	my servants and yours.
Vuestros amigos y <i>los suyos</i>	your friends and his.

## PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese disjunctive pronouns are as follows :—

		SINGULAR.	
		Masc.	Fem.
Add the Article.	Meu		minha (mine).
	Teu		tua (thine).
	Seu		sua (his, hers, its).
	Nosso		nossa (ours).
	Vosso		vossa (yours).
	Seu		sua (theirs).
		PLURAL.	

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular.

*Examples.*

Vosso cavallo e <i>o meu</i>	your horse and mine.
Sua irmã e <i>a vossa</i>	his sister and yours.
Meus criados e <i>os vossos</i>	my servants and yours.
Vossos amigos e <i>os seus</i>	your friends and his.

## FRENCH.

95. A question as to whom a thing belongs is asked and answered in the following manner :

*Examples.*

À qui est ce livre ?	whose is this book ?
C'est <i>le mien</i> , or C'est <i>à moi</i>	it is mine.
C'est à Monsieur B——	it is Mr B.'s.

96. *Le mien*, *le tien*, &c., are also employed substantively to denote what belongs to us in the shape of property or substance, and are necessarily in the singular masculine.

*Example.*

Il est soigneux *du sien*.  
He is careful of his own (property.)

97. *Les miens*, *les tiens*, &c., are used substantively to signify relations, friends with whom we are very intimate, retainers, &c., and are always in the masculine plural.

*Example.*

C'est à nous à payer pour les crimes des *nôtres*.  
It is for us to pay for the crimes of ours (friends.)

## ITALIAN.

In Italian thus :

*Examples.*

Di chi è questo libro ?	whose is this book ?
È <i>mio</i>	it is mine.
È del Sigr. B——	it is Mr B.'s.

As seen in the above examples, these pronouns do not take the article when they come after the verb "to be" in the sense of *belonging to*.

Il *mio*, il *tuo*, &c., are used in like manner.

*Example.*

Vieni, e domanda *il tuo*.  
Come, and demand thine own.

I *miei*, i *tuoi*, &c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Il re vedendo la battaglia perduta, e abbandonato dai *suoi*, &c.  
The king seeing the battle lost, and abandoned by his own (troops.)

## SPANISH.

In Spanish thus :

*Examples.*

¿ De quien es este libro ? whose is this book ?  
*Mio* mine  
 Es del Sr. B—— it is Mr B.'s.

} Same as Italian.

} El mio, et tuyo, &amp;c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Ha cuidado del *suyo*.  
 He takes care of his own.

} Los mios, los tuyos, &amp;c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Ha atendido á la subsistencia de *los suyos*.  
 He has provided for the subsistence of his relations.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese thus :

*Examples.*

De quem é este livro ? whose is this book ?  
 E o meu it is mine  
 E do Senhor B—— it is Mr B.'s

} The article should be used in Portuguese, thus differing from Italian and Spanish.

} Same of o meu, o teu, &amp;c.

*Example.*

Ha cuidado *do seu*.  
 He takes care of his own.

} Os meus, os teus, &amp;c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Todos os *meus* morrerão.  
 All my relations are dead.

## Demonstrative Pronouns.

On reference to the lists of pronouns and examples which follow, it will be observed that the Italians, Spaniards, and Portuguese divide their demonstrative pronouns into three classes, while the French language admits of only two: in the latter, "this" and "that" are both expressed by the same word, the place being denoted by the addition of an adverb. For instance, the equivalent of "this book" would be *ce livre*; "that boy," *ce garçon*. To indicate an object understood, the French would say for the English word "this" (meaning here, close to),

## FRENCH.

In French, Demonstrative Pronouns are expressed as follows:

		SINGULAR.	
		Masc.	Fem.
Ce, cet *		cette	this, that, it
Celui		celle	that
Celui-ci		celle-ci	this
Celui-là		celle-là	that
Ceci			this
Cela			that
		PLURAL.	
		Masc.	Fem.
Ces		ces	these or those
Ceux		celles	those
Ceux-ci		celles-ci	those
Ceux-là		celles-là	those

## ITALIAN.

In Italian they are divided into three classes, as follows:

1st, Those which indicate the proximity of an object to the person who speaks, as—

		Masc. Singular.	Fem. Singular.
Questi,	}	this man	Costei } this woman
Costui		or person.	or person.
Questo		this	Questa this
		Masc. Plural.	Fem. Plural.
Questi		these	Queste these
		Both genders.	
Costoro		these men, women, or persons.	



Demonstrative Pronouns.

“*celui-ci*,” or, “*celle-ci*” (fem.), and for the word “that” (meaning there, at a distance,) “*celui-là*.” The adverbs of place, *ici* (here, contracted) and *là* (there) are added. All the other languages have special words to express “this” and “that,” as, in Italian, “*questo libro*,” *this* book, “*quella casa*,” *that* house; they do not, therefore, need an adverb of place, except for the sake of emphasis or to designate more particularly the place of the object pointed at.—(Note *a*.)

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

} Same.

} Same. (Note *b*.)

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Este	esta	esto	this
Estos	estas	(no plural)	these

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Este	esta	isto	this
Estes	estas	(no plural)	these

Note *a*.—When referring to two different subjects gone before, expressed in English by “the former” and “the latter,” “*the former*” is expressed in French, by *celui-là*; Italian, by *quegli*; Spanish, by *aquel*; Portuguese, by *aquelle*: and “*the latter*” in French, by *celui-ci*; Italian, by *questi*; Spanish, by *este*; Portuguese, by *este*.

Note *b*.—When the preposition *de* or *em* accompanies a demonstrative pronoun, they generally form one word, as *deste*, of this; *nessa*, of that; *daquelles*, of those. Sometimes *de* is expressed by *d'*, as *d'isso*, of this.

## FRENCH.

98. \**Cet* is employed before a noun masculine singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

*Examples.*

*Ce* livre, *cet* homme, *cette* femme, et *ces* choses.

This (or that) book, man, woman, and things.

Votre cheval et *celui* de votre frère.

Your horse and that of your brother.

Votre opinion est *celle* de tout le monde.

Your opinion is that of all the world.

Vos pleurs et *ceux* de votre père.

Your tears and those of your father.

Vos lettres et *celles* qui sont adressées à mon ami.

Your letters and those addressed to my friend.

*Celui* qui vous parle.

He who speaks to you.

*Cet* ouvrage est *celui* d'un bon père ; or,

*Cet* ouvrage est d'un bon père.

This work is that of a good father.

J'eus *celui-ci*, mon père *celui-là*.

I had this, and my father that.

L'un préfère *ceux-ci*, et l'autre *ceux-là*.

One prefers these, the other those.

Note *a*.—*Questa* is contracted in the following instances :—

Stamane	} this morning.
Stamattina	

In lieu of *questa mattina*, &c.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

\* *Questi* che non vuol parlare.

This man who does not wish to speak.

*Questo* cavallo mi piace molto.

This horse pleases me much.

*Questa* pera è dolce.

This pear is sweet.

*Questi* giardini sono piacevoli.

These gardens are pleasant.

*Queste* tavole sono ben fatte.

These tables are well made.

\* *Questi* in the first example is only used in the nominative singular, and always refers to a person. *Questo* and its variations are applied to things as well to persons.—(Note *a*.)

2nd, Those indicating the proximity of an object to the person spoken to :

	Masc. Singular.
Cotesti, cotestui	that person, or man.
Codesto, cotesto	that.

Stasera	this evening.
Stanotte	to-night.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Ahora bien ; *esta* inteligencia, *esta* ciencia, *este* gusto perfeccionado, *este* language no podian ser, &c.  
 Well ; this intelligence, this learning, this perfect taste, this language could not be, &c.  
 Y à *esto* \* mi decidí.  
 And I decided on this.

*Examples.*

Todos *estes* objectos devem ser examinados.  
 All these objects should be examined.  
*Esta* carta é favoravel.  
 This letter is favourable.  
*Isto* deu-se principalmente no meio dia.  
 This happened principally in the middle of the day.

\* The Spanish language has a distinct neuter pronoun used in an indeterminate sense as above ; that is, no particular object being pointed at. } Same.

} Same.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Ese	esa	eso	that
Esos	esas	(no plural)	those

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Esse	essa	isso	that
Esses	essas	(no plural)	those

## FRENCH.

*Ce qu'il y a de vrai.*  
 What (or that which) is true.  
*Ce sont nos méthodes qui nous égarent.*  
 It is our systems which mislead us.  
*Ce furent les mêmes personnes.*  
 They were the same persons.  
*Est-ce un si grand malheur ?*  
 Is it such a misfortune ?  
*Ce n'est pas un sot ; or, Il n'est pas un sot*  
 He is not a fool.  
*C'est vrai ; or, Il est vrai.*  
 It is true.  
*C'est clair.*  
 It is clear.  
*Le plus grand des plaisirs c'est la reconnaissance.*  
 The greatest of pleasures is gratitude.  
*Épargner les plaisirs c'est les multiplier.*  
 To be sparing of pleasures is to multiply them.  
*Ceci me plaît.*  
 This pleases me.  
*Cela est vrai.*  
 That is true.

99. After *celui*, *celle*, &c., it is usual, in sentences where a participle past follows, to place between them and the latter the pronoun *qui*, followed by the auxiliary

## ITALIAN.

		Fem. Singular.	
Cotestei			that person, or woman.
Codesta, cotesta			that
	Masc. Plural.		Fem. Plural.
Codesti, cotesti	those	Codeste, coteste	those
	Cotestoro		those persons

*Examples.*

*Cotesti non mi piace.*  
 That person does not please me.  
*Quanto vale cotesto panno ?*  
 What is the value of that cloth ?  
*Ho bisogno di cotesta penna.*  
 I want that pen.  
*Datemi cotesti libri.*  
 Give me those books.  
*Coteste carte sono mie.*  
 Those papers are mine.  
*Cotesti* (first example) applies to a person, and is used only in the nominative singular.  
*Cotesto* and its variations refer to things as well as to persons.  
 3rd, Those indicating the remoteness of an object both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.

	Masc. Singular.	
Quegli, or colui		that person or man.
Quello		that

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Ese* libro que tiene Vmd. en la mano.

That book which you have in your hand.

Quedaos esta tarde con nosotros y contadme como ha nacido en vos *esa* aficion á la lectura, *ese* sentimiento de la poesia, y *esos* deseos por conocer á los hombres.

Remain with us this evening, and tell me how you have acquired *that* affection for reading, *that* poetical sentiment, and those wishes to know mankind.

*Eso* es cierto.

That is certain.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Aquel	aquella	aquello	that.
Aquellos	aquellas	no plural)	those.

*Examples.*

Á nenhuma das tres ordens Gregas, nem á *essa* dos Romanos.

To none of the three Greek orders, nor to that of the Roman.

Até o ultimo seculo offerece a historia a existencia permanente *dessas* aldeias e *dessas* cidades.

To the latest age history shows the permanent existence of these villages and cities.

Em consequencia *disso*.

In consequence of this.

Não faço caso *disso*.

I do not mind that.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Aquella	aquella	aquillo	that.
Aquelles	aquellas	(no plural)	those.

## FRENCH.

verb, as in the above example, “vos lettres et *celles qui sont* adressées à mon ami,” although “vos lettres et celles adressées à mon ami” would be grammatical. It is better, however, to adopt the former method.

100. “*Ce*” as a pronoun is used in a variety of ways, before the verb “*être*” in most of its tenses, in the singular or plural, or coming after the verb, as the examples show: *fût-ce*” is employed for both numbers, for it would not sound well to say “*furent-ce*” or “*fussent-ce*.” *Est-ce* should also be said instead of *seront-ce*.

101. Particular attention must be paid to the use of *c'est* instead of *il est*. When an adjective follows the verb, and it is necessary to use *que* or *de* after, *il* must be employed, not *ce*: as, *Il est juste qu'un meurtrier périsse* (it is right that a murderer should perish); *il est aisé de faire* (it is easy to do). *C'est* is generally used between two substantives, and between two infinitives where the equivalent of *ce* in English would be left out: as, *Le plus grand des plaisirs c'est, &c.; végété, c'est mourir.*

102. *Ceci* and *cela* are only employed in respect to things. In familiar conversation *ça* is said instead of *cela*, as *ça ira*; comment *ça va-t-il*. *Cela* is sometimes

## ITALIAN.

Fem. Singular.

Colei that person or woman.  
Quella that

Masc. Plural.

Fem. Plural.

Quelli or quei those  
Coloro those persons.  
Quelle those

*Examples.*

*Quegli* che parla è mio padre.  
That man who (or he who) speaks is my father.

*Quel* ragazzo è molto cattivo.

That boy is very wicked.

*Quella* casa è bellina.

That house is pretty.

*Quei* modelli sono perfetti.

Those specimens are perfect.

*Quelle* signorine sono sortite.

Those young ladies have gone out.

*Quegli* (first example) applies to a person, and is only used in the nominative singular.

*Quello* and its variations refer to things as well as to persons.

*Note.*—*Quello* is used in the singular at the end of a phrase, and before *s impura*, or *z*: *quell'* before a vowel; *quel* before a noun masculine, beginning with a simple consonant; *quelli* in the plural is used at the end of a

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Aquel* libro, y *aquella* carta que estan sobre la mesa.  
That book and that letter which are on the table.  
Yo no soy de *aquellos* amos ingratos y duros.  
I am not one of those ungrateful and hard masters.  
*Aquellas* muchachas que vimos la semana pasada.  
Those girls whom we saw last week.  
*Aquello* (neuter) es malo.  
That is bad.

*Remark.*—In Spanish the definite article is often employed as a demonstrative : as,

*Los* (or *aquellos*) que son sabios son felices.  
Those who are wise are happy.

*Remark.*—*Estotro*, *esotro*, &c., compounds of *este*, *ese*, &c., and the word *otro* (other), are occasionally employed, varying according to gender and number.

*Examples.*

O nome *daquelle* principe feliz.  
The name of that happy prince.  
Nem estes conhecem *aquelles*.  
Nor do the latter know the former (or, these know those).  
Tenha a bondade de nos mostrar *aquellas* cartas, e *aquelle* documento.  
Have the goodness to show us those letters, and that document.

Same : as,

Teve missão diversa, *a* de principe philosopho, e *a* de principe legislador.

He had a varied mission, that of a prince-philosopher and that of a prince-legislator.

*Remark.*—The word *otro* (other) is often joined to these pronouns, thus :—

Est'otro ; ess'otra ; aquell'otros (this other, &c.)

They sometimes are written in one word, as *Estoutro*, &c.

## FRENCH.

replaced by *ce* ; but the former particularises more distinctly : as, *Cela est vrai*, or *c'est vrai*.

## ITALIAN.

phrase ; *quegli* before a vowel, *s impura*, or *z* ; *quei*, or *que'* before any other consonant.

*Remarks.*—*Costui*, *costei*, *costoro*, *colui*, *colei*, *coloro*, are employed chiefly in poetry and in elevated diction ; also as denoting contempt in ordinary conversation.

*Questo* and *quello* are frequently used in an indeterminate sense, some substantive being understood : as,

In questo egli sopravvenne.

At this moment he came up.

Non gli dite quello.

Do not tell him that.

## Relative Pronouns.

In French the relative pronouns are as follows :—

*Qui, que, quoi, lequel, dont.*

103. *Lequel* is composed of *quel* and the article *le*, and varies in gender and number as follows :—

	SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.	
Lequel	laquelle	which.
Duquel	de laquelle	of which.
Auquel	à laquelle	to which.
	PLURAL.	
Lesquels	lesquelles	which.
Desquels	desquelles	of which.
Auxquels	auxquelles	to which.

In Italian they are,—

*Che, quale, cui, chi.*

*Quale* is used with the definite article in the following manner :—

	SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.	
Il quale	la quale	which.
Del quale	della quale	of which.
Al quale	alla quale	to which.
	PLURAL.	
I quali	le quali	which.
Dei quali	delle quali	of which.
Ai quali	alle quali	to which.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

## Relative Pronouns.

In Spanish they are,—

*Que, quien, cual, cuyo.*

*Cual* is also employed with the article, as follows :—

SINGULAR.		
Masc.	Fem.	
El cual	la cual	which.
Del cual	de la cual	of which.
Al cual	á la cual	to which.
PLURAL.		
Los cuales	las cuales	which.
De los cuales	de las cuales	of which.
Á los cuales	á las cuales	to which.

In Portuguese they are,—

*Que, quem, qual, cujo.*

*Qual* is also employed with the definite article, as follows :—

SINGULAR.		
Masc.	Fem.	
O qual	a qual	which.
Do qual	da qual	of which.
Ao qual	á qual	to which.
PLURAL.		
Os quaes	as quaes	which.
Dos quaes	das quaes	of which.
Aos quaes	ás quaes	to which.

## FRENCH.

104. *Qui* expresses *who*, *which*, and *that*, as the subject or nominative of a verb, and relates to *persons* and *things*. } *Che* in like manner.

*Examples.*L'homme *qui* parle.

The man who speaks.

La femme *qui* chante.

The woman who sings.

Le cheval *qui* vient.

The horse which is coming.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*Il titolo *che* è dato.

The title which is given.

La donna *che* canta.

The woman who is singing.

Le signorine *che* parlano.

The young ladies who are speaking.

105. *Qui* (whom), accompanied by a preposition, may take the place of *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c., but only when referring to persons. } *Cui* and *chi* in like manner.

*Examples.*Les hommes *avec qui* je causais.

The men with whom I was speaking.

L'enfant *à qui* je parle.

The child to whom I speak.

*Examples.*Gli uomini *à cui* parlava.

The men to whom I was speaking.

*Di chi* sono queste cose?

Whose things are these?

106. *Qui* is called *absolute* when it has no antecedent expressed, and then relates only to persons. } *Chi* follows same rule.

*Examples.**Qui* est-il?

who is he?

*Qui* cherchez-vous?

whom do you seek?

*Qui* frappe à la porte?

who knocks at the door?

*Examples.**Chi* è di là?

Who is there?

*Chi* non sente la gelosia certamente non ama.

Who does not feel jealousy certainly does not love.

## SPANISH.

} *Que* : same.

*Examples.*

Beltran *que* fué el segundo.

Beltran, who was the second.

Mi madre *que* era de genio menos aspero.

My mother, who was of a temper less severe.

Los libros *que* estan aqui.

The books which are here.

} *Quien*, in like manner.

*Examples.*

Los hombres *con quienes*\* hablé.

The men to whom I spoke.

\* *Quien* has a plural termination, but does not vary in form on account of gender.

} *Quien* : same.

*Examples.*

¿ *Quien* le ha dicho á Vmd. ?

who told you ?

¿ *Quien* llama ?

who calls ?

## PORTUGUESE.

} *Que* : same.

*Examples.*

Os *que* meditam outros futuros.

Those who consider other futures.

A actividade *que* o distingue.

The activity which distinguishes him.

} *Quem*, in like manner.

*Example.*

O principe *a quem* obedecemos.

The prince whom we obey.

*Remark.*—*Quem*, unlike *quien*, in Spanish has no change in the plural.

} *Quem* : same.

*Example.*

*Quem* é ?

who is it !

*Quem* bate á porta ?

who knocks at the door ?

## FRENCH.

107. *Qui*, although invariable in form, carries with it the gender, number, and person of its antecedent; the verb which follows must, therefore, likewise agree. } *Che*; same.

*Examples.*

C'est moi *qui* l'ai fait.

It is I who have done it.

*Nous qui sommes* satisfaits.

We who are satisfied.

108. *Que* expresses whom, which, and that, when in the accusative; or, in other words, when relating to an object which is the direct regimen of the verb. It then refers both to persons and things. } *Che* and *cui* are both used in the accusative, the latter sometimes in preference, in order to avoid any ambiguity. *Che* refers to persons and things, *cui* to persons only.

*Examples.*

L'homme *que* vous voyez.

The man you see (or, whom you see).

Les chevaux *que* vous vendez.

The horses which you sell.

Les services *qu'*on a rendus.

The services which have been rendered.

*Remark.*—In English the pronoun is frequently not expressed—in French always. And observe that *que* drops the *e* before a vowel or *h* mute and takes an apostrophe. *Qui* never changes.

## ITALIAN

*Examples.*

*Son io che* lo dico.

It is I who say it.

*Noi che siamo* soddisfatti

We who are satisfied.

*Examples.*

L'avviso *che* egli confermava.

The news which he confirmed.

La compassione *che* sentivano.

The pity which they felt.

L'amico *cui*\* tanto amava mio padre.

The friend whom my father loved so much.

\* Had *che* been here used it would not have been clearly understood which was loved, the friend or the father.

## SPANISH.

} *Que*, same.

*Examples.*

Soy yo *que* lo digo.

It is I who say it.

*Nosotros que* somos satisfechos.

We who are satisfied.

} *Que*, or *quien*, are used. *Que* refers to persons and things; *quien* to persons only.

*Examples.*

Las mugeres *que* vimos; or, las mugeres *á quienes* vimos.

The women whom we saw.

La proteccion *que* la Providencia nos habia dispensado.

The protection which Providence had given us.

## PORTUGUESE.

} *Que*, same.

*Examples.*

Sou eu *que* o repito.

It is I who repeat it.

*Nos que* somos ricos.

We who are rich.

} Same of *que* and *quem*.

*Examples.*

As mulheres *que* vimos; or, *a quem* vimos.

The women whom we saw.

O livro *que* leio.

The book which I read.

## FRENCH.

109. *Que* is a relative absolute when no antecedent is expressed, and then refers only to things; *qui*, as before said, to persons and things.

*Examples.*

*Que* cherchez vous là ?

What are you looking for there ?

*Que* voulez-vous que je fasse ?

What do you wish me to do ?

110. *Que* is also used in a sentence expressing admiration, pity, &c.

*Examples.*

*Qu'il* est bon !

How good he is !

*Qu'elle* est belle !

How beautiful she is !

111. *Quoi* is both relative and absolute, and has reference only to things.

*Examples.*

Les choses à *quoi*.

The things to which.

De *quoi* vous plaignez-vous ?

Of what do you complain ?

## ITALIAN.

*Che* follows same rule.

*Examples.*

*Che* vorreste dire ?

What would you wish to say ?

*Che* avete fatto questa mattina ?

What have you done this morning ?

*Che* is here used in like manner.

*Examples.*

*Che* bella casa !

What a beautiful house ?

*Che* bell'uomo !

What a fine man !

*Che* or *quale* would be here employed

*Examples.*

Le cose alle *quali*.

The things to which.

Di *che* parlate ?

Of what do you speak ?

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} *Que*, same.

} *Que*, same.

*Examples.*

¿ *Que* es eso?  
What is that?  
¿ *Que* es lo que ha hecho la señora?  
What has the lady done?

*Examples.*

*Que* faz elle?  
What is he doing?  
*Que* vos parece?  
What do you think?

} *Que* would also be employed here.

} *Que* in like manner.

*Examples.*

*Que* desgracia!  
What a misfortune!  
*Que* bella casa!  
What a beautiful house!

*Examples.*

*Que* lastima!  
What a pity!  
*Que* bello templo!  
What a fine temple!

} *Que* and *cual* would be used in Spanish.

} *Que* and *qual* would be used in Portuguese.

*Examples.*

Las cosas á las *cuales*.  
The things to which.  
¿ Á *que* piensa Vmd.?  
Of what are you thinking?

*Examples.*

Do *qual* falla Vm.?  
Of which do you speak?  
As cousas ás *quaes*.  
The things to which.

## FRENCH.

112. *Quel*, which, whom, is the only relative pronoun which takes the article, forming a compound word, as shown in the preceding table, where it will also be observed that the definite article *le* is joined to the pronoun, and varies according to gender and number. This pronoun as a relative refers to persons and things.

*Examples.*

L'homme sur lequel je compte.

The man on whom I count.

Les espérances à lesquelles il se livre.

The hopes to which he gives himself up.

J'ai reçu une lettre de mon frère laquelle est sur la table.

I have received a letter from my brother, which is on the table.

*Remark.*—*Qui* and *que* frequently take the place of *lequel*, &c., but the latter pronoun should always be used when the antecedent is separated by other words, as in the last example.

113. *Quel*, with and without the article, is sometimes *absolute*, and mostly employed in interrogative sentences, *lequel* marking a distinction between two or more objects.

## ITALIAN.

*Quale* corresponds with the French word *quel* in so far that it takes the article, which, however, is never joined to it. *Quale* differs from the French in having the same termination for both *genders*; namely, *quale* in the singular, and *quali* in the plural number. It refers to persons and things.

*Examples.*

Si volsero al fanciullo il quale riferí, &c.

They turned to the boy who related, &c.

Alla quale rivelazione furono presi da spavento.

At which revelation they were taken with fear.

} Same remark applies to *chi*, *che*, and *cui*.

} *Quale* sing. and *Quali* pl. are used in like manner.



## SPANISH.

*Cual* takes the article as in the Italian equivalent, and, like the latter, has the same termination for both genders. }

*Cual*, singular number ; *cuales*, plural.  
It refers both to persons and things.

*Examples.*

Á mi protector, *el cual* me dijo.  
To my protector, who said to me.

Á la cueva de *la cual* ninguno se atrevia á sacar la cabeza.

To the cave from which no one dared to withdraw his head.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Qual*, same.

*Qual*, singular number ; *Quaes*, plural.  
It refers both to persons and things.

*Examples.*

Todos os officiaes, *aos quaes* S.M. concedeu a honra.  
All the officers to whom H.M. conceded the honour.

E cem outras cousas, entre as *quaes*.  
And a hundred other things, among which.

} Same of *que* and *quien*.

} Same of *que* and *quem*.

} *Cual* singular, and *cuales* plural, same.

} *Qual*, singular, and *quaes*, plural, same.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.**Quel* est votre projet ?

What is your project ?

*Quelles* sont vos raisons ?

What are your reasons ?

*Laquelle* de ces deux choses est préférable ?

Which of these two things is preferable ?

*Remark.*—It also expresses admiration, pity, &c., as*Quel* dommage !           What a pity !

114. *Dont* expresses *whose*, *of whom*, *of which*, and relates in gender and number to persons and things.

*Examples.*La femme *dont* la beauté est admirable.

The woman whose beauty is wonderful.

L'homme *dont* vous parlez.

The man of whom you are speaking.

Les récompenses *dont* vous êtes digne.

The rewards of which you are worthy.

115. *Ce que* expresses *what* or *that which*.

*Example.**Ce que* vous dites est vrai.

What you say is true.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.**Qual* è quella delle mode ?

What is that among the fashions ?

*Quale* più vi piace fra quelle cose ?

What pleases you most among those things ?

*Cui* expresses *whose*, and is used with or without a preposition, the article being placed first. It has not the varied signification of the French word, *dont*.

*Examples.*È un uomo il *cui* (or, *il di cui*) coraggio è grande.

He is a man whose courage is great.

La *cui* casa.

Whose house.

*Ciò che* or *quel che* in like manner.

*Example.**Ciò* (or *quel*) *che* dite è vero.

What you say is true.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

- ¿ *Cuales* son sus motivos de vd. ?  
 What are your motives ?  
 ¿ *Cual* de los tres quiere vd. ?  
 Which of the three will you have ?

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

- Quaes* são seus motivos ?  
 What are his motives ?  
*Qual* dos tres quer Vm. ?  
 Which of the three will you have ?

*Cuyo* expresses *whose* and *of which*; it varies in termination according to the gender and number of the object to which it relates, and is used with and without article and preposition.

*Examples.*

- Morian casi todos aquellos *cuyos* nombres se apuntaban en él.  
 Nearly all those died whose names were written in it.  
 Tres casas *cuyas* rentas manejó.  
 Three houses, the rents of which he managed.

*Lo que* in Spanish.

*Example.*

- Lo que* digo es verdad.  
 What I say is true.

*Cujo*, same.

*Examples.*

- De nossas rendas, *cuja* maior parte é absorvida.  
 Of our rents, the greater part of which is absorbed.  
 O senhor de *cuja* casa venho.  
 The gentleman from whose house I come.

*O que* in Portuguese.

*Example.*

- O que* digo é verdade.  
 What I say is true.

## PRONOUNS.

## Indefinite Pronouns.

## FRENCH.

*Quiconque, quelconque.*  
Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Autrui.*  
Another's, others.  
*Personne, nul, aucun.*  
No one, nobody.  
*Quelqu'un.*  
Somebody, some one, some.

*Chacun.*  
Each, every one.  
*Tel.*  
Such.  
*Tout.*  
All.  
*L'un l'autre.*  
Each other, one another, both.

116. *Quiconque* is for both genders, but has no plural, and refers only to persons.

*Example.*

*Quiconque* veut être homme doit savoir redescendre.  
Whoever would be a man must know how to fall again.

## ITALIAN.

*Chiunque, chicchessia, qualunque, qualsisia,*  
*qualsivoglia, checchessia, checché.*

Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Altrui.*  
Another's, others.

*Nessuno.*  
No one, nobody.  
*Alcuno, qualcuno, qualcheduno.*  
Somebody, some one, some.

*Ognuno, ciascuno, ciascheduno.*  
Each, every one.

*Tale.*

Such.

*Tutto*

All.

*L'un l'altro.*

Each other, one another, both.

*Chiunque :* } same rule.  
*Chicchessia.* }

*Example.*

*Chiunque* ha detto questo non ha detto la verità.  
Whoever said this has not told the truth.

## Indefinite Pronouns.

## SPANISH.

*Quienquiera, cualquiera.*  
Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Ageno.*  
Another's, others.  
*Ninguno, nadie.*  
No one, nobody, none.  
*Alguno, uno, alguien, algo.*  
Somebody, some one, some.

*Cada, cada uno, cada cual.*  
Each, every one.  
*Tal.*  
Such.  
*Todo.*  
All, every.  
*Uno—(á, u, y)—otro.*  
Each other, one another, both.

*Quienquiera* : same rule, except that it is sometimes, but very rarely, in the plural, which is *quienesquiera*.

*Example.*

*Quienquiera* que sea.  
Whoever he may be.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Quemquer, qualquer.*  
Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Alheio, outrem.*  
Another's, others.  
*Ninguem, nenhum, nenhuns* (pl.)  
No one, nobody, none.  
*Algun* (sing.), *alguns* (pl. masc.), *hum* or  
*um, alguem, algo.*  
Somebody, some one, some.  
*Cada, cada um, cada qual.*  
Each, every one.  
*Tal.*  
Such.  
*Todo, tudo.*  
All, every.  
*Um e outro.*  
Each other, one another, both.

*Quemquer* is invariable, and refers only to persons.

*Example.*

*Quemquer* que seja.  
Whoever he may be.

## FRENCH.

117. *Quelconque* serves for both genders, takes an *s* in the plural, and refers both to persons and things. It always follows the substantive.

*Examples.*

Un homme *quelconque*.  
Whatever man.  
Il n'y a projet *quelconque*.  
There is no project whatever.

118. *Autrui* is mostly used in a vague sense, when we speak of *others* in general, without particularising individuals. It is invariable in gender and number, and nearly always accompanied by a preposition.

*Examples.*

Le bien *d'autrui*.  
Another's goods.  
Mal juger *d'autrui*.  
To judge ill of others.

## ITALIAN.

*Qualunque*, *qualsisia*, *qualsivoglia*, serve for both genders, and refer both to persons and things. They follow the general rule of adjectives, sometimes preceding, and as frequently following, the noun.

*Examples.*

In *qualunque* stato io mi trovi.  
In whatever condition I may be.  
Non vedo persona *qualsisia* (Note *a*).  
I see no one whatever.

*Checchessia* and *cheché* are used without a substantive, and refer only to things.

*Examples.*

Non aver bisogno di *chechessia*.  
Not to have need of anything whatever.

*Altrui* is employed in the same sense, but may be used with or without a preposition.

*Examples.*

Esser largo dell'*altrui*.  
To be free with another's property.  
Non fare *altrui* quel che non vuoi per te.  
Do not to others what thou wouldst not for thyself.

Note *a*.—*Alcuno(a)* is here more frequently used : as, Non vedo persona *alcuna*. *Qualsisia*, *qualsivoglia*, and *chechessia*, are rendered in the plural by *qualsisiano*, *qualsivogliano*, and *chechessiano*.

## SPANISH.

*Cualquiera* (sing.), *cualesquiera* (pl.), serve for both genders, and refer to persons and things. They generally precede a substantive when expressed before a verb.

*Examples.*

*Cualquiera* que guste Vmd.

Whichever you please.

*Cualesquiera* cosas que digan de mi.

Whatever things they may say of me.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Qualquer* (sing.), *quaesquer* (pl.)

Same as Spanish.

*Examples.*

*Qualquer* que seja o fim.

Whatever may be the end.

*Quaesquer* cousas que digão de mim.

Whatever things they may say of me.

*Ageno* in the same manner, but has besides a feminine and a plural termination.

*Examples.*

Lo *ageno* ; or, el bien *ageno*.

The property of others.

Léjos nos hallamos de nuestras tierras, no conocidos de nadie en las *agenas*.

We find ourselves far from our own lands, and unknown in others by anybody.

*Alheiro* : same as *ageno*, Spanish.

*Outrem* invariable.

*Examples.*

Quando interprete de *alheias* sensações.

When interpreting the feelings of others.

O *alheio*.

The property of others.

Não faze a *outrem* o que não te fizessem a ti.

Do not to others what thou wouldst not for thyself,

## FRENCH.

119. *Personne* is equivalent to *aucun* or *nul individu*, and, unlike the substantive *personne* (a person), which is feminine, has always a masculine signification, expressing the idea of mankind in general. In a negative sense it is accompanied by the particle *ne*.

*Examples.*

*Personne* n'est parfait.  
No one is perfect.  
Il n'y a *personne*.  
There is no one.

120. When used without the negative, *personne* }  
means any one.

*Example.*

Y a-t-il *personne* ?  
Is there any one ?

121. *Quelqu'un* has two significations, *absolute* and *relative*. In the former, having reference to no particular substantive, it is always masculine, and adds *s* for the plural number to each word.

## ITALIAN.

*Nessuno* (masc.), *nessuna* (fem.), takes the negative *non* only when *following* a verb.

*Examples.*

Ma *non* vide *nessuno*.  
But he saw no one.  
*Nessuno* mi conosce.  
Nobody knows me.

} Same of *nessuno*.

*Example.*

Vi è *nessuno* ?  
Is there any one ?

*Qualcuno*, *qualcheduno*, *alcuno*.—The first two of these pronouns are used only in the singular number, and refer both to persons and things. They change the *o* into *a* for the feminine. *Alcuno* varies in gender and number as an adjective, and relates to persons and things.



## SPANISH.

*Ninguno, Nadie.* The first, like its Italian equivalent, changes the final *o* into *a* for the feminine. *Nadie* is invariable. They take the negative *no* only when following a verb.

*Examples.*

No conozco á *ninguno*.

I know nobody.

*Ninguno* (or *Nadie*) pareció.

No one appeared.

} The Spanish would use the word *alguno*.

*Example.*

Allí está *alguno*?

Is any one there?

*Alguno, uno, alguien, algo.* The first two are both *absolute* and *relative*, agreeing, as the latter, in gender and number with the noun to which it refers, whether of persons or things. *Alguien* is invariable, and refers to *persons* only. *Algo* is also invariable, and refers to *things* only. It takes *de* before an adjective, and *que* before an infinitive.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Nenhum, Ninguém.* The first changes thus: *nenhum*, masc., *nenhuma*, fem.; plural,  *nenhuns*, masc., *nenhumas*, fem. *Ninguém* is invariable. They take the negative, *não*, only when following a verb, as in Spanish.

*Examples.*

Não costum lagrimas a *ninguem*.

They cost tears to nobody.

*Ninguém* está ahí.

Nobody is there.

} The Portuguese use the word *alguem*.

*Example.*

*Alguem* está ahí?

Is any one there?

*Algun, hum* or *um, alguem, algo.* The first two are both *absolute* and *relative*, agreeing, as the latter, in gender and number with the noun to which it refers, whether of persons or things. *Alguem* is invariable, and refers to persons only. *Algo* is also invariable, but seldom used.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Quelqu'un* a-t-il jamais douté sérieusement de l'existence de Dieu ?

Has any one ever doubted seriously the existence of God ?

*Quelques-uns* ont fait, &c.

Some have done, &c.

In a relative sense, when referring to some noun expressed, it agrees with the same in gender and number

*Examples.*

*Quelqu'un* de ces messieurs.

Some one of these gentlemen.

*Quelqu'une* de ces dames.

Some one of these ladies.

*Quelques-uns* de ces messieurs.

Some (or any) of these gentlemen.

*Quelques-unes* de ces choses.

Some (or any) of these things.

*Note.*—As *absolute* it refers to persons only ; as *relative*, both to persons and things.

122. *Chacun* is both *absolute* and *relative* ; from its nature, it is used only in the singular number.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli guardava se *qualcuno* (or *qualcheduno*) arrivasse.  
He looked about to see if anybody arrived.

Sto in aspetto di *qualcuno* (or *qualcheduno*).  
I am expecting somebody.

*Qualcuna* di queste signore.

Some one of these ladies.

Ho visto *alcuni* dei vostri amici.

I have seen some of your friends.

*Alcune* di queste signorine mi hanno detto.

Some of these young ladies have told me.

Prendete *alcune* di queste mandorle.

Take some of these almonds.

*Ognuno, Ciascuno, Ciascheduno.*

Same rule.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

- ¿ Que puede decir *uno* ?  
 What can one say ?  
*Algunos* (or *unos*) lo saben.  
 Some know it.
- ¿ Tiene Vd. *algo de bueno* ?  
 Have you anything good ?
- ¿ Tiene Vd. *algo que decir* ?  
 Have you anything to say ?

*Remark.*—*Alguno*, relating to a noun masculine, frequently suppresses the last vowel, and can be written *algun*.

*Cada, Cada uno, Cada cual.*  
 Same rule.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

- Querem-se bem *uns* aos outros.  
 They love one another well.
- Eu tenho *alguma* cousa que fazer.  
 I have something to do.
- Fazer o que *alguem* manda.  
 To do what one orders.
- Ter que fazer com *alguem*.  
 To have to do with somebody.

*Cada, cada um, cada qual.*  
 Same rule.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Chacun* a son défaut.  
Every one has his fault.  
*Chacun* de ces hommes.  
Each of these men.  
*Chacune* de ces femmes.  
Each of these women.

123. *Tel* is both *absolute* and *relative*: as the latter, it varies in gender and number, like an adjective.

*Examples.*

*Tel* qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera.  
He who laughs on Friday will cry on Sunday.  
*Tel* homme, *telles* choses.  
Such a man, such things.

124. *Tout* is properly speaking an adjective, sometimes also an adverb; it is, however, frequently employed as a pronoun, and is then invariable in its termination (Note a.)

*Examples.*

*Tout* me plaît            Everything pleases me.  
Je sais *tout*            I know all.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Ognuno* la loda.  
Every one praises her.  
Il generale comandò che *ciascuno* (or *ciascheduno*) se n'andasse via.  
The general ordered that every one should go away.

*Tale*, or *Tal*, masc. and fem. sing., *Tali*, masc. and fem. plural, are both *absolute* and *relative* (Note b.)

*Examples.*

*Tal* ride oggi il quale domani piangerà.  
He laughs to-day who will cry to-morrow.  
*Tale* uomo, *tali* cose.  
Such a man, such things.

*Tutto* is also used as an adjective and an adverb, but, unlike the French equivalent, has a plural form; in the examples it is an indefinite pronoun.

*Examples.*

*Tutto* mi piace.            Everything pleases me.  
*Tutti* parlano così.        All speak thus.

Note a.—To express *all* when conveying an idea of plurality, a noun must be added: as, *Tout le monde* le sait—All know it.

Note b.—*Cotale*, sing.—*cotali*, pl., (such) are seldom now used.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Que se contente *cada uno* (or *cada cual*) con su poco ó su mucho.

Let every one be content with his small portion or his abundance.

*Cada hombre, cada muger.*

Each man, each woman.

*Tal*, masc. and fem. singular ; *Tales*, masc. and fem. plural, are *absolute* and *relative*. (Note a.)

*Examples.*

*Tal* amo, *tal* criado.

Like master, like man.

Encontró vigorosos sostenedores, *tales* como los Sres.

B. & C.

He met vigorous supporters, such as Messrs B. & C.

} *Todo*, same rule as Italian.

*Examples.*

Es *todo* de oro.

It is all of gold.

*Todos* le perdonan.

All pardon him.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Este, *cada* vez, se aproximava mais.

This, each time, approached nearer.

*Cada* homem, *cada* mulher.

Each man, each woman.

*Cada qual* no seu officio.

Every one to his trade.

*Tal*, masc. and fem. singular ; *Taes*, masc. and fem. plural, are *absolute* and *relative* (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Essa é harmonia, *tal* como hoje a entendemos.

This is harmony, such as we to-day understand it.

*Tal* homem, *taes* cousas.

Such a man, such things.

} *Todo* is also used as an adjective and an adverb ; *tudo* in an indeterminate sense, and expressing totality.

*Examples.*

*Todos* havemos de morrer.

We must all die.

Em *tudo* que diz.

In all that he says.

Em *tudo* ou em parte.

Altogether, or in part.

Note a.—*Fulano* also means *such a one*, in an absolute sense ; but is now seldom used.

## FRENCH.

125. *L'un l'autre*. This pronoun, as it is generally called, varies in form, according to the gender and number of the object to which it relates, in the following manner :

## SINGULAR.

*L'un l'autre*, masculine  
*L'une l'autre*, feminine.

## PLURAL.

*Les uns les autres*, masculine.  
*Les uncs les autres*, feminine.

When only two objects are referred to, *l'un l'autre* should be in the singular number, being rendered in English by "each other." Several persons or things being signified, the plural form must be employed. (Exceptions to this rule are sometimes found among the best French writings.)

*Examples.*

Cas deux hommes se détestent *l'un l'autre*.  
 These two men detest each other.  
 Toutes ces femmes s'aiment *les unes les autres*.  
 All these women love one another.

126. *L'un et l'autre* means *both*, and must not be confounded with *l'un l'autre*.

*Example.*

*L'un et l'autre* sont à plaindre.  
 Both are to be pitied.

## ITALIAN.

*L'un l'altro*. Same, as follows :

## SINGULAR.

*L'un l'altro*, masculine.  
*L'una l'altra*, feminine.

## PLURAL.

*Gli uni gli altri*, masculine.  
*Le une le altre*, feminine.

Same of *l'un l'altro*.

*Examples.*

Questi due uomini si detestano *l'un l'altro*.  
 These two men detest each other.  
 Queste donne si amano *le une le altre*.  
 These women love one another.

*L'uno e l'altro*. Same.

*Example*

*L'uno e l'altro* merita ricompensa.  
 Both merit a reward.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Uno*—(á, u, y)—*otro*. The Spanish have no expression corresponding exactly to the *l'un l'autre* of the French and the *l'un l'altro* of the Italian. In order to give the same meaning, they must connect *uno* and *otro* by a conjunction or preposition, according to the sense, thus forming a pronoun which relates both to persons and things, and varies in form to agree with its object in gender and number.

} Same of *um* and *outro*.

*Examples.*

Esos dos hombres se aman *uno á otro*.

Those two men love one another.

Cuando nos estabamos despidiendo *los unos y los otros*.

When we were taking leave of one another.

} *Uno y otro* can be employed to express the word *both*.

*Example.*

Que *uno y otro* téman.

Let both fear.

*Examples.*

Esses dois homens amão-se *um á outro*.

These two men love one another.

*N'umas e n'outras* recebia mais agrados do que dinheiro.

Among them he received more pleasure than money.

} Same of *um e outro*.

*Example.*

*Um e outro* vêm.

Both are coming.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—A verb following this pronoun should be in the plural number, as seen in the last example.

127. When a preposition precedes *l'un*, the same should be repeated before *l'autre*. } Same.

*Example.*

Il parle de *l'un* et de *l'autre*.  
He speaks of both.

*Remark.*—Both is also rendered in French by *tous deux*, *tous les deux*, and *deux à la fois*.

128. *Both*, as used in English before two nouns, adjectives, or pronouns, is omitted in French, and rendered as follows : } Same.

*Examples.*

Et le riche et le pauvre vont également des douleurs à la mort.

Both the rich and poor pass equally from afflictions unto death.

Il est renommé tant par son esprit que par ses richesses.  
He is renowned both by his talents and by his riches.

## ITALIAN.

*Remark.*—Unlike the French rule, a verb following the pronoun is placed in the *singular* number. (Note *a*.)

*Example.*

Io parlo dell' *uno* e dell' *altro*.  
I speak of both.

In Italian, by *Tutti e due*, *ambidue*, masc., *ambidue*, fem.; *entrambi*, masc., *entrambe*, fem.; *ambo*, masc. and fem.

*Examples.*

E per mare e per terra.  
Both by sea and land.

È famoso tanto per la saviezza del padre che per la propria.

He is famous both on account of his father's wisdom and his own.

Note *a*.—It is obvious that with the Italians this mode of using the verb is elliptical. In the example, *merita* is understood after *l'uno*.



## SPANISH.

*Remark.*—A verb following this pronoun is placed in } Same.  
the plural number, as in French.

} Same. } Same.

*Example.*

Conozco *al uno y al otro*.  
I know both.

In Spanish, by *Los dos* (masc.), *las dos* (fem.); *ambos* (masc.), *ambas* (fem.); *entrambos* (masc.), *entrambas* (fem.)

} Same. } Same.

*Examples.*

Ella es hermosa é inteligente.  
She is both beautiful and intelligent.  
Tanto por mar como por tierra.  
Both by sea and land.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

*D'uma e d'outra parte*.  
On both sides.

In Portuguese, by *Ambos* (masc.), *ambas* (fem.); *os dois* (masc.), *as duas* (fem.)

*Examples.*

Ella é formosa e inteligente.  
She is both handsome and intelligent.  
Tanto por mar como por terra.  
Both by sea and land.

## FRENCH.

129. *On*,—*one, they, people, we*. This pronoun has no corresponding equivalent in other languages—that is, none which has so varied an employment. Although it is essentially of the singular number, *on* more frequently conveys an idea of plurality; but the verb which accompanies it must *always* be put in the third person singular.

*Examples.*

*On* avait calomnié cet homme.

They had slandered that man.

Comme il parlait ainsi, *on* entendit un bruit.

While he was thus speaking, a noise was heard.

*On* s'étonna d'abord, *on* finit par s'indigner.

People were at first astonished, and finished by being indignant.

130. Although the verb remains in the singular number, *on* admits of either a singular or plural substantive after the verb.

*Examples.*

*On* n'est pas un voleur.

One is not a robber.

*On* n'est pas des voleurs.

We are not robbers.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, to express vaguely, *they, people, &c.*, the pronoun *si* is used, accompanied by an active verb in the third person singular.

*Example.*

*Si* prevede, (or) *si* dice che la Francia *si* armerà alle frontiere.

They foresee, (or) people say that France will arm at the frontiers.

If there be an accusative (in English), it may become a nominative in Italian, the verb then agreeing with it in number.

*Examples.*

*Si* vede una persona.

They see a person; or, a person is seen.

*Si* vedono molte persone.

They see many persons; or, many persons are seen.

SPANISH.

} Same with the pronoun *se*.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same with the pronoun *se*.

*Example.*

*Se cree, (or) se dice* que es hombre de juicio.  
They *think, (or) people say* that he is a man of sense.

*Examples.*

Falla-*se* em guerra.  
They speak of war.  
Que *se diz* na côrte ?  
What do they say at court ?

} Same.

*Examples.*

*Se ha* recibido el libro.  
They have received the book ; or, the book has been received.  
*Se han* recibido los libros.  
They have received the books ; or, the books have been received.

} Same.

*Examples.*

No centro *vê-se* uma bandeja de prata.  
In the centre a silver tray is seen.  
No centro *vêm-se* tres bandejas de prata.  
In the centre three silver trays are seen.

## FRENCH.

131. *On* follows the verb *only* when used in a parenthesis, or interrogatively, and is then connected by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Elle était, *dit-on*, la fille d'un Italien.  
 She was, they say, the daughter of an Italian.  
 Ne *dit-on* pas ?  
 Do they not say ?

132. When a verb which precedes *on* ends in a vowel, the letter *t* should be placed between them.

*Example.*

Ne pense-t-*on* pas ?  
 Do they not think ?

*Note.*—When *on* is preceded by any word which is not a verb, it takes *l'*, except at the beginning of a sentence : as,

Sa maison, d'où *l'on* voyait la mer.

His house, from which they viewed the sea.

This rule is better avoided when a word which follows *on* begins with *l*. We should say, Si *on le* pense, and not Si *l'on le* pense.

## ITALIAN.

*They, people, &c.*, can also be understood, not expressed, a verb in the active voice being employed in the third person plural.

*Example.*

*Prevedono*, (or) *dicono* che la Francia si armerà alle frontiere.  
 They foresee, (or) people say that France will arm at the frontiers.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Dicen* que es hombre de juicio.  
They say that he is a man of sense.

*Example.*

*Dizem* que está ferido mortalmente.  
They say that he is mortally wounded.

*General Remarks.*—The equivalents of the auxiliary verbs “To have,” and “To be,” are fully conjugated both in their simple and compound tenses. As these verbs are in constant use, and assist in the formation of all others, the learner is recommended to commit to memory the auxiliaries in the language or languages under study.

For the purpose of showing the agreement of the verb with the personal pronoun, the latter is expressed in the present tense indicative mood of the verb “To have;” but, as before remarked, the personal pronoun in the nominative case is usually suppressed in the Italian, Spanish, and Portuguese languages. In French, it is always expressed, except in the second person singular, and the first and second persons plural of the imperative mood.

*Regular Verbs* are all conjugated in the same manner as the models which come after the verb “To be :”

### Verb To Have.

#### SIMPLE TENSES.

##### Infinitive Mood.

Present.  
To have.  
Participle Present.  
Having.  
Participle Past.  
Had.

FRENCH.  
Present.  
Avoir.  
Participle Present.  
Ayant.  
Participle Past.  
Eu.

ITALIAN.  
Present.  
Avere.  
Participle Present.  
Avendo.  
Participle Past.  
Avuto.

##### Indicative Mood.

Present.  
I have.  
Thou hast.  
He, or she, has.  
We have.  
You have.  
They have.

Present.  
J'ai.  
Tu as.  
Il a.  
Nous avons.  
Vous avez.  
Ils ont.

Present.  
Io ho.  
Tu hai.  
Egli ha.  
Noi abbiamo.  
Voi avete.  
Eglio hanno.

these show how the termination at the top of each column should be changed in order to give the right inflection. It is needless to add the compound tenses, which are simply formed by the auxiliary and past participle.

*Irregular Verbs.*—Remarks on these are made in the Preface, to which the student is referred: it must, however, be repeated that the verbs are arranged alphabetically as regards the English word; this plan will be found convenient, frequent reference being required. As there is more irregularity in the moods and tenses of French verbs than in those of the other languages, the former are fully conjugated; the latter show only those tenses which are irregular.

**Verb To Have.**  
**SIMPLE TENSES.**  
**Infinitive Mood.**

SPANISH.			PORTUGUESE.	
Haber	Present.	tener.	Haver	Present.
Habiendo	Participle Present.	teniendo.	Havendo	Participle Present.
Habido	Participle Past.	tenido.	Havido	Participle Past.
<b>Indicative Mood.</b>				
Yo he	Present.	tengo.	Eu hei	Present.
Tu has		tienes.	Tu has	tenho.
Él ha		tiene.	Elle ha	tens.
Nosotros hémos		tenémos.	Nós havemos, or hemos	tem.
Vosotros habéis		tenéis.	Vós haveis, or heis	temos.
Ellos han		tiénen.	Elles hão	tendes.
				têm or têm.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
Imperfect.	Imperfect.	Imperfect.
I had.	J'avais.	Aveva, or avevo.
Thou hadst.	Tu avais.	Avevi.
He had.	Il avait.	Aveva.
We had.	Nous avions.	Avevamo.
You had.	Vous aviez.	Avevate.
They had.	Ils avaient.	Avévano.
Preterite Definite.	Preterite Definite.	Preterite Definite.
I had.	J'eus.	Ebbi.
Thou hadst.	Tu eus.	Avesti.
He had.	Il eut.	Ebbe.
We had.	Nous eûmes.	Avemmo.
You had.	Vous eûtes.	Aveste.
They had.	Ils eurent.	Ebbero.
Future.	Future.	Future.
I shall, or will, have.	J'aurai.	Avrò.
Thou shalt have.	Tu auras.	Avrai.
He shall have.	Il aura.	Avrà.
We shall have.	Nous aurons.	Avremo.
You shall have.	Vous aurez.	Avrete.
They shall have.	Ils auront.	Avranno.



Indicative Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.

Imperfect.

Había	tenia.
Habías	tenias.
Había	tenia.
Habíamos	teníamos.
Habíais	teníais.
Habían	tenían.

Preterite Definite.

Hube	tuve.
Hubiste	tuviste.
Hubo	tuvo.
Hubimos	tuvimos.
Hubisteis	tuvisteis.
Hubiéron	tuvieron.

Future.

Habré	tendré.
Habras	tendras.
Habrá	tendrá.
Habrémos	tendremos.
Habréis	tendreis.
Habran	tendran.

PORTUGUESE.

Imperfect.

Havia	tinha.
Havias	tinhas.
Havia	tinha.
Havíamos	tinhamos.
Havíeis	tinheis.
Havião	tinhão.

Preterite Definite.

Houve	tive.
Houveste	tiveste.
Houve	teve.
Houvemos	tivemos.
Houvestes	tivestes.
Houverão	tiverão.

Future.

Haverei	tereí.
Haveras	teras.
Haverá	terá.
Haveremos	teremos.
Havereis	tereis.
Haverão	terão.

## VERBS.

## Conditional Mood.

I should, or would, have  
 Thou wouldst have.  
 He would have.  
 We would have.  
 You would have.  
 They would have.

FRENCH.  
 J'aurais.  
 Tu aurais.  
 Il aurait.  
 Nous aurions.  
 Vous auriez.  
 Ils auraient.

ITALIAN.  
 Avrei.  
 Avresti.  
 Avrebbe.  
 Avremmo.  
 Avreste.  
 Avrebbero.

## Imperative Mood.

Have (thou.)  
 Let him have.  
 Let us have.  
 Have (ye.)  
 Let them have.

Aie.  
 Qu'il ait.  
 Ayons.  
 Ayez.  
 Qu'ils aient.

Abbi.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbiamo.  
 Abbiate.  
 Abbiano.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.  
 That I may have.  
 That thou mayst have.  
 That he may have.  
 That we may have.  
 That you may have.  
 That they may have.

Present.  
 Que j'aie.  
 Que tu aies.  
 Qu'il ait.  
 Que nous ayons.  
 Que vous ayez.  
 Qu'ils aient.

Present.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbiamo.  
 Abbiate.  
 Abbiano.

## Conditional Mood.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Habría	tendria.	Haveria	teria.
Habrias	tendrias.	Haverias	terias.
Habria	tendria.	Haveria	teria.
Habríamos	tendríamos.	Haveríamos	teríamos.
Habríais	tendríais.	Haverieis	terieis.
Habrían	tendrían.	Haverião	terião.

## Imperative Mood.

Ten.	Ha (not now used)	tem (tu)
Ténga.	Haja	tenha.
Tengámos.	Hajamos	tenhamos.
Tened.	Havei	tende.
Téngan.	Hajão	tenhamos.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.		Future.		Present.		Future.	
Háya	si hubiere.	Tenga	si tuviere.	Haja	se houver.	Tenha	se tiver.
Háyas	si hubieres.	Tengas	si tuvieres.	Hajas	se houveres	Tenhas	se tiveres.
Háya	si hubiere.	Tenga	si tuviere.	Haja	se houver	Tenha	se tiver.
Hayámos	si hubiéremos.	Tengámos	si tuviéremos.	Hajámos	se houvermos.	Tenhámos	se tivermos.
Hayáis	si hubiéreis.	Tengais	si tuviéreis.	Hajais	se houverdes.	Tenhais	se tiverdes.
Háyan	si hubiéren.	Tengan	si tuvieren.	Hajão	se houverem.	Tenhão	se tiverem.

## VERBS.

Subjunctive Mood—*continued.*

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
Imperfect.	Imperfect.	Imperfect.
That I might have.	Que j'eusse.	Avessi.
That thou mightst have.	Que tu eusses.	Avessi.
That he might have.	Qu'il eût.	Avesse.
That we might have.	Que nous eussions.	Avessimo.
That you might have.	Que vous eussiez.	Aveste.
That they might have.	Qu'ils eussent.	Avessero.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

	Past Participle.	Past Participle.
To have had.	Avoir eu.	Avere avuto.
Having had.	Ayant eu.	Avendo avuto.

## Indicative Mood.

	Preterite Indefinite.	Preterite Indefinite.
I have had.	J'ai eu.	Ho avuto.
Thou hast had.	Tu as eu.	Hai avuto.
He has had.	Il a eu.	Ha avuto.
We have had.	Nous avons eu.	Abbiamo avuto.
You have had.	Vous avez eu.	Avete avuto.
They have had.	Ils ont eu.	Hanno avuto.

Subjunctive Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.

Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>	Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>
Hubiéra	hubiése.	Tuviéra	tuviése.
Hubieras	hubieses.	Tuvieras	tuvieses.
Hubiera	hubiese.	Tuviera	tuviese.
Hubiéramos	hubiésemos.	Tuviéramos	tuviésemos.
Hubierais	hubieseis.	Tuvierais	tuviéseis.
Hubieran	hubiesen.	Tuviéran	tuviesen.

PORTUGUESE.

Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>	Present.	Future.
Houvéra	houvesse.	Tivéra	tivesse.
Houvéras	houvesse.	Tivéras	tivesse.
Houvéra	houvesse.	Tivéra	tivesse.
Houvéramos	houvessemos.	Tivéramos	tivessemos.
Houvéreis	houvesseis.	Tivéreis	tivesseis.
Houvérão	houvessem.	Tivérão	tivessem.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Infinitive Mood.

Past Participle.  
 Haber tenido.  
 Habiendo tenido.

Past Participle.  
 Ter tido.  
 Tendo tido.

Indicative Mood.

Preterite Indefinite.  
 He tenido.  
 Has tenido.  
 Ha tenido.  
 Hemos tenido.  
 Habeis tenido.  
 Han tenido.

Preterite Indefinite.  
 Tenho tido, or havido.  
 Tens tido        "   "  
 Tem tido         "   "  
 Temos tido      "   "  
 Tendes tido     "   "  
 Têm tido        "   "

## VERBS.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## FRENCH.

## Pluperfect.

I had had.  
 Thou hadst had.  
 He had had.  
 We had had.  
 You had had.  
 They had had.

## Preterite Anterior.

I had had.  
 Thou hadst had.  
 He had had.  
 We had had.  
 You had had.  
 They had had.

## Future Anterior.

I shall have had.  
 Thou shalt have had.  
 He shall have had.  
 We shall have had.  
 You shall have had.  
 They shall have had.

## Pluperfect.

J'avais eu.  
 Tu avais eu.  
 Il avait eu.  
 Nous avions eu.  
 Vous aviez eu.  
 Ils avaient eu.

## Preterite Anterior.

J'eus eu.  
 Tu eus eu.  
 Il eut eu.  
 Nous eûmes eu.  
 Vous eûtes eu.  
 Ils eurent eu.

## Future Anterior.

J'aurai eu.  
 Tu auras eu.  
 Il aura eu.  
 Nous aurons eu.  
 Vous aurez eu.  
 Ils auront eu.

## ITALIAN.

## Pluperfect.

Aveva avuto.  
 Avevi avuto.  
 Aveva avuto.  
 Avevamo avuto.  
 Avevate avuto.  
 Avevano avuto.

## Preterite Anterior.

Ebbi avuto.  
 Avesti avuto.  
 Ebbe avuto.  
 Avemmo avuto.  
 Aveste avuto.  
 Ebbero avuto.

## Future Anterior.

Avrò avuto.  
 Avrai avuto.  
 Avrà avuto.  
 Avremo avuto.  
 Avrete avuto.  
 Avranno avuto.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

## Pluperfect.

Habia tenido.  
 Habias tenido.  
 Habia tenido.  
 Habiamos tenido.  
 Habiais tenido.  
 Habian tenido.

## Preterite Anterior.

Hube tenido.  
 Hubiste tenido.  
 Hubo tenido.  
 Hubimos tenido.  
 Hubisteis tenido.  
 Hubieron tenido.

## Future Anterior.

Habré tenido.  
 Habras tenido.  
 Habrá tenido.  
 Habremos tenido.  
 Habreis tenido.  
 Habran tenido.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Pluperfect.

Tinha tido,	or	havido.
Tinhas tido	”	”
Tinha tido	”	”
Tinhamos tido	”	”
Tinheis tido	”	”
Tinhão tido	”	”

## Preterite Anterior.

Tive tido	”	”
Tiveste tido	”	”
Teve tido	”	”
Tivemos tido	”	”
Tivestes tido	”	”
Tiverão tido	”	”

## Future Anterior.

Terei tido	”	”
Teras tido	”	”
Terá tido	”	”
Teremos tido	”	”
Tereis tido	”	”
Terão tido	”	”

## Conditional Mood.

I should have had.  
 Thou shouldst have had.  
 He should have had.  
 We should have had.  
 You should have had.  
 They should have had.

FRENCH.  
 J'aurais eu.  
 Tu aurais eu.  
 Il aurait eu.  
 Nous aurions eu.  
 Vous auriez eu.  
 Ils auraient eu.

ITALIAN.  
 Avrei avuto.  
 Avresti avuto.  
 Avrebbe avuto.  
 Avremmo avuto.  
 Avreste avuto.  
 Avrebbero avuto.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Preterite.  
 That I may have had.  
 That thou mayst have had.  
 That he may have had.  
 That we may have had.  
 That you may have had.  
 That they may have had.

Preterite.  
 Que j'aie eu.  
 Que tu aies eu.  
 Qu'il ait eu.  
 Que nous ayons eu.  
 Que vous ayez eu.  
 Qu'ils aient eu.

Preterite.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbiamo avuto.  
 Abbiate avuto.  
 Abbiano avuto.

Pluperfect.  
 That I might have had.  
 That thou mightst have had.  
 That he might have had.  
 That we might have had.  
 That you might have had.  
 That they might have had.

Pluperfect.  
 Que j'eusse eu.  
 Que tu eusses eu.  
 Qu'il eût eu.  
 Que nous eussions eu.  
 Que vous eussiez eu.  
 Qu'ils eussent eu.

Pluperfect.  
 Avessi avuto.  
 Avessi avuto.  
 Avesse avuto.  
 Avessimo avuto.  
 Aveste avuto.  
 Avessero avuto.



Conditional Mood.

SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Habria tenido.	Teria tido or havido.
Habrias tenido.	Terias tido " "
Habria tenido.	Teria tido " "
Habriamos tenido.	Teriamos tido " "
Habriais tenido.	Terieis tido " "
Habrian tenido.	Terião tido " "

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.
Haya tenido	si hubiere tenido.	Tenha tido, or havido.	se tiver tido, or havido.
Hayas tenido	si hubieres tenido.	Tenhas tido " "	se tiveres tido " "
Haya tenido	si hubiere tenido.	Tenha tido " "	se tiver tido " "
Hayamos tenido	si hubieremos tenido.	Tenhâmos tido " "	se tivermos tido " "
Hayais tenido	si hubiereis tenido.	Tenhais tido " "	se tiverdes tido " "
Hayan tenido	si hubieren tenido.	Tenhão tido " "	se tiverem tido " "

Pluperfect.	Pluperfect.
Hubiera, or hubiese tenido.	Tivéra, or tivesse
Hubieras, or hubieses tenido.	Tivéras, or tivesses
Hubiera, or hubiese tenido.	Tivéra, or tivesse
Hubieramos, or hubiesemos tenido.	Tivéramos, or tivéssemos
Hubierais, or hubieseis tenido.	Tivéreis, or tivésseis
Hubieran, or hubiesen tenido.	Tivérão, or tivessem

} tido, or havido.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Have."

## FRENCH.

133. *Avoir*—to have.

The past participle *eu*, in the masculine, adds *e* to form the feminine, according to rules on past participles hereafter given.

134. This verb, besides assisting in the conjugation of others, serves also as auxiliary to itself in all compound tenses.

135. *Avoir* is used in the third person singular as an impersonal verb. Example :

*Il y a des hommes*                      there are men.

136. It is also employed where the verb *to be* is used in English in sentences expressing physical or moral conditions, such as cold, hunger, fear, &c. : as,

*J'ai froid*                      I am cold.

*J'ai peur*                      I am afraid.

## ITALIAN.

*Avere*—to have.

*Avuto* (masc.), *avuta* (fem.)  
See rules on past participles.

Same.

In Italian the verb *to be* is generally used ; as, *C'è*, or *vi è* (there is, or there are) ; but frequently also the verb *avere*: as,

*Quante miglia ci ha ?*                      how many miles is it ?

Same: as,

*Ho fame*                      I am hungry.

*Ho paura*                      I am afraid.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Have."

## SPANISH.

*Haber* and *Tener*.—In Spanish, as in Portuguese, there are two verbs which signify "To have." The first, *haber*, is employed in the capacity of an auxiliary in forming the compound tenses of other verbs; as, *he hablado*, I have spoken. It serves also as an impersonal verb: ex., *hay (not ha) un hombre*, there is a man; *habia otros*, there were others.

*Tener* denotes possession; as, *tengo una casa*, I have a house; *tenemos libros*, we have books.

It is occasionally used as an auxiliary; as, *tengo hablado*, I have spoken. When before an infinitive, it should be followed by the word *que*; as, *tengo que decir*, I have to say.

} Same: as,

*Tengo hambre*  
*Tengo miedo*

I am hungry.  
I am afraid.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Haver* and *Ter*.—Both these verbs signify *to have*.

*Haver* often accompanies another verb to express a future action; as, *ha de vir hoje*, he has to, or will come to-day. It is also used as an impersonal verb; ex., *ha muitas casas*, there are many houses.

*Ter* (like *tener* in Spanish) denotes possession; but, unlike the latter, it is the verb most frequently used as an auxiliary in forming the compound tenses of other verbs as well as its own: ex., *tenho dormido*, I have slept. When before an infinitive it should be followed by *que*; as, *tenho que fazer*, I must do.

} Same: as,

*Tenho frio*  
*Tenho medo*

I am cold.  
I am afraid.

## VERBS.

## Verb To Be.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

Present.  
To be.  
Participle Present.  
Being.  
Participle Past.  
Been.

FRENCH.  
Present.  
Être.  
Participle Present.  
Êtant.  
Participle Past.  
Été.

ITALIAN.  
Present.  
Essere.  
Participle Present.  
Essendo.  
Participle Past.  
Stato.

## Indicative Mood.

Present.  
I am.  
Thou art.  
He is.  
We are.  
You are.  
They are.  
Imperfect.  
I was.  
Thou wast.  
He was.  
We were.  
You were.  
They were.

Present.  
Je suis.  
Tu es.  
Il est.  
Nous sommes.  
Vous êtes.  
Ils sont.  
Imperfect.  
J'étais.  
Tu étais.  
Il était.  
Nous étions.  
Vous étiez.  
Ils étaient.

Present.  
Sono.  
Sei.  
È.  
Siamo.  
Siete.  
Sono.  
Imperfect.  
Era.  
Eri.  
Era.  
Eravamo.  
Eravate.  
Erano.

## Verb To Be.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Present.		Present.	
Ser	estar.	Ser	estar.
Siendo	Participle Present. estando.	Sendo	Participle Present. estando.
Sido	Participle Past. estado.	Sido	Participle Past. estado.

## Indicative Mood.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Present.		Present.	
Soy	estoy.	Sou	estou.
Eres	estas.	Es	estás.
Es	está.	É, or he	está.
Somos	estamos.	Somos	estamos.
Sois	estais.	Sois	estais.
Son	están.	São	estão.
Imperfect.		Imperfect.	
Era	estaba.	Era	estava.
Eras	estabas.	Eras	estavas.
Era	estaba.	Era	estava.
Eramos	estabamos.	Eramos	estavamos.
Erais	estabais.	Ereis	estaveis.
Eran	estaban.	Erão	estavão.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

Preterite Definite.

I was.  
Thou wast.  
He was.  
We were.  
You were.  
They were.

Future.

I shall be.  
Thou shalt be.  
He shall be.  
We shall be.  
You shall be.  
They shall be.

FRENCH.

Preterite Definite.

Je fus.  
Tu fus.  
Il fut.  
Nous fûmes.  
Vous fûtes.  
Ils furent.

Future.

Je serai.  
Tu seras.  
Il sera.  
Nous serons.  
Vous serez.  
Ils seront.

ITALIAN.

Preterite Definite.

Fui.  
Fosti.  
Fu.  
Fummo  
Foste.  
Furono.

Future.

Sarò.  
Sarai.  
Sarà.  
Saremo.  
Sarete.  
Saranno.

## Conditional Mood.

Present.

I should be.  
Thou shouldst be.  
He should be.  
We should be.  
You should be.  
They should be.

Present.

Je serais.  
Tu serais.  
Il serait.  
Nous serions.  
Vous seriez.  
Ils seraient.

Present.

Sarei.  
Saresti.  
Sarebbe.  
Saremmo.  
Sareste.  
Sarebbero.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
	Preterite Definite.		Preterite Definite.
Fui	estuve.	Fui	estive.
Fuiste	estuviste.	Foste	estiveste.
Fué	estuvo.	Foi	esteve.
Fuimos	estuvimos.	Fomos	estivémos.
Fuisteis	estuvisteis.	Fostes	estivéstes.
Fueron	estuvieron.	Forão	estiverão.
	Future.		Future.
Seré	estará.	Serei	estarei.
Seras	estaras.	Serás	estarás.
Será	estará.	Será	estará.
Seremos	estaremos.	Seremos	estaremos.
Sereis	estareis.	Sereis	estarcis.
Seran	estaran.	Serão	estarão.

Conditional Mood.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
	Present.		Present.
Seria	estaria.	Seria	estaria.
Serías	estarias.	Serías	estarias.
Seria	estaria.	Seria	estaria.
Seríamos	estariamos.	Seríamos	estariamos.
Seriais	estariais.	Serieis	estarcieis.
Serían	estarian.	Serião	estarião.

## Imperative Mood.

Be (thou).  
 Let him be.  
 Let us be.  
 Be (you).  
 Let them be.

## FRENCH.

Sois.  
 Qu'il soit.  
 Soyons.  
 Soyez.  
 Qu'ils soient.

## ITALIAN.

Sii.  
 Sia.  
 Siamo.  
 Siate.  
 Siano.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.  
 That I may be.  
 That thou mayst be.  
 That he may be.  
 That we may be.  
 That you may be.  
 That they may be.

## Present.

Que je sois.  
 Que tu sois.  
 Qu'il soit.  
 Que nous soyons.  
 Que vous soyez.  
 Qu'ils soient.

## Present.

Sia.  
 Sia.  
 Sia.  
 Siamo.  
 Siate.  
 Siano, or sieno

Imperfect.  
 That I might be.  
 That thou mightst be.  
 That he might be.  
 That we might be.  
 That you might be.  
 That they might be.

## Imperfect.

Que je fusse.  
 Que tu fusses.  
 Qu'il fût.  
 Que nous fussions.  
 Que vous fussiez.  
 Qu'ils fussent.

## Imperfect.

Fossi.  
 Fossi.  
 Fosse.  
 Fossimo.  
 Foste.  
 Fossero.



## Imperative Mood.

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Se	está.	Sê	estâ
Sea	esté.	Seja	esteja.
Seamos	estemos.	Sejamos	estejamos.
Sed	estad.	Sede	estai.
Sean	esten.	Sejão	estejão.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.
Sea	si fuere.	Esté	si estuviere.	Seja	se for.	Esteja	se estiver.
Seas	si fueres.	Estes	si estuvieres.	Sejas	se fores.	Estejas	se estiveres.
Sea	si fuere.	Esté	si estuviere.	Seja	se for.	Esteja	se estiver.
Seamos	si fuéremos.	Estemos	si estuviéremos.	Sejâmos	se formos.	Estejâmos	se estivermos.
Seais	si fuereis.	Esteis	si estuvieréis.	Sejais	se fordes.	Estejais	se estiverdes.
Sean	si fueren.	Esten	si estuvieren.	Sejão	se forem.	Estejão	se estiverem.
<i>In ra</i>	<i>in se.</i>	<i>In ra</i>	<i>in se.</i>	<i>In ra</i>	<i>in se.</i>	<i>In ra</i>	<i>in se.</i>
Fuera	fuese.	Estuviera	estuviese.	Fora	fosse.	Estivera	estivesse.
Fueras	fueses.	Estuvieras	estuvieses.	Foras	fosses.	Estiveras	estivesse.
Fuera	fuese.	Estuviera	estuviese.	Fora	fosse.	Estivera	estivesse.
Fueros	fuesemos.	Estuvieramos	estuviesemos.	Foramos	fossemos.	Estiveramos	estivessemos.
Fuerais	fueseis.	Estuvierais	estuvieseis.	Forais	fosséis.	Estiverais	estivesseis.
Fueran	fuesen.	Estuvieran	estuviesen.	Forão	fossen.	Estiverão	estivessem.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

Past Participle.  
To have been.  
Having been.

FRENCH.  
Past Participle.  
Avoir été.  
Ayant été.

ITALIAN.  
Past Participle.  
Essere stato.  
Essendo stato.

## Indicative Mood.

Preterite Indefinite.  
I have been.  
Thou hast been.  
He has been.  
We have been.  
You have been.  
They have been.

Preterite Indefinite.  
J'ai été.  
Tu as été.  
Il a été.  
Nous avons été.  
Vous avez été.  
Ils ont été.

Preterite Indefinite.  
Sono stato.  
Sei stato.  
È stato.  
Siamo stati.  
Siete stati.  
Sono stati.

Pluperfect.  
I had been.  
Thou hadst been.  
He had been.  
We had been.  
You had been.  
They had been.

Pluperfect.  
J'avais été.  
Tu avais été.  
Il avait été.  
Nous avions été.  
Vous aviez été.  
Ils avaient été.

Pluperfect.  
Era stato.  
Eri stato.  
Era stato.  
Eravamo stati.  
Eravate stati.  
Erano stati.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

## SPANISH.

## Past Participle.

Haber sido	haber estado.
Habiendo sido	habiendo estado.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Past Participle.

Ter sido, or estado.
Tendo sido, or estado.

## Indicative Mood.

## Preterite Indefinite.

He sido	he estado.
Has sido	has estado.
Ha sido	ha estado.
Hemos sido	hemos estado.
Habeis sido	habeis estado.
Han sido	han estado.

## Pluperfect.

Habia sido	habia estado.
Habias sido	habias estado.
Habia sido	habia estado.
Habiamos sido	habiamos estado.
Habiais sido	habiais estado.
Habian sido	habian estado.

## Preterite Indefinite.

Tenho sido, or estado.
Tens sido     "     "
Tem sido     "     "
Temos sido   "     "
Tendes sido  "     "
Têm sido     "     "

## Pluperfect.

Tinha sido, or estado.
Tinhas sido   "     "
Tinha sido   "     "
Tinhamos sido"     "
Tinheis sido  "     "
Tinhão sido  "     "

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## FRENCH.

Preterite Anterior.

I had been.

Thou hadst been.

He had been.

We had been.

You had been.

They had been.

Future Anterior.

I shall have been.

Thou shalt have been.

He shall have been.

We shall have been.

You shall have been.

They shall have been.

Preterite Anterior.

J'eus été.

Tu eus été.

Il eut été.

Nous eûmes été.

Vous eûtes été.

Ils eurent été.

Future Anterior.

J'aurai été.

Tu auras été.

Il aura été.

Nous aurons été.

Vous aurez été.

Ils auront été.

## ITALIAN.

Preterite Anterior.

Fui stato.

Fosti stato.

Fu stato.

Fummo stati.

Foste stati.

Furono stati.

Future Anterior.

Sarò stato.

Sarai stato.

Sarà stato.

Saremo stati.

Sarete stati.

Saranno stati.

## Conditional Mood.

I should have been.

Thou shouldst have been.

He should have been.

We should have been.

You should have been.

They should have been.

J'aurais été.

Tu aurais été.

Il aurait été.

Nous aurions été.

Vous auriez été.

Ils auraient été.

Sarei stato.

Saresti stato.

Sarebbe stato.

Saremmo stati.

Sareste stati.

Sarebbero stati.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
	Preterite Anterior.		Preterite Anterior.
Hube sido	hube estado.	} This tense not used.	
Hubiste sido	habiste estado.		
Hubo sido	hubo estado.		
Hubimos sido	hubimos estado.		
Hubisteis sido	hubisteis estado.		
Hubieron sido	hubieron estado.		
	Future Anterior.		Future Anterior.
Habré sido	habré estado.	} See remarks on the Portuguese future tense, page 241.	
Habras sido	habras estado.		
Habrá sido	habrá estado.		
Habremos sido	habremos estado.		
Habreis sido	habreis estado.		
Habran sido	habran estado.		

## Conditional Mood.

Habria sido	habria estado.	Teria sido,	or, estado.
Habrias sido	habrias estado.	Terias sido,	„ „
Habria sido	habria estado.	Teria sido,	„ „
Habriama sido	habriamos estado.	Teriamos sido,	„ „
Habriais sido	habriais estado.	Terieis sido,	„ „
Habrian sido	habrian estado.	Terião sido,	„ „

## VERBS.

## Subjunctive Mood.

## Preterite.

That I may have been.  
 That thou mayst have been.  
 That he may have been.  
 That we may have been.  
 That you may have been.  
 That they may have been.

## Pluperfect.

That I might have been.  
 That thou mightst have been.  
 That he might have been.  
 That we might have been.  
 That you might have been.  
 That they might have been.

## FRENCH.

## Preterite.

Que j'aie été.  
 Que tu aies été.  
 Qu'il ait été.  
 Que nous ayons été.  
 Que vous ayez été.  
 Qu'ils aient été.

## Pluperfect.

Que j'eusse été.  
 Que tu eusses été.  
 Qu'il eût été.  
 Que nous eussions été.  
 Que vous eussiez été.  
 Qu'ils eussent été.

## ITALIAN.

## Preterite.

Sia stato.  
 Sia stato.  
 Sia stato.  
 Siamo stati.  
 Siate stati.  
 Siano stati.

## Pluperfect.

Fossi stato.  
 Fossi stato.  
 Fosse stato.  
 Fossimo stati.  
 Foste stati.  
 Fossero stati.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Be."

137. *Être*, To be.

The past participle, *été*, is invariable, whatever may be the words which precede or follow it.

*Essere*, To be.

The past participle, *stato*, varies according to the gender and number of its subject.

## Subjunctive Mood.

SPANISH.			PORTUGUESE.		
Present.		Future.	Present.		Future.
Haya	} sido or estado	si hubiere	Tenha	} sido or estado.	se tiver
Hayas		si hubieres	Tenhas		se tiveres
Haya		si hubiere	Tenha		se tiver
Hayamos		si hubieremos	Tenhâmos		se tivermos
Hayais		si hubiereis	Tenhais		se tiverdes
Hayan		si hubieren	Tenhão		se tiverem
In <i>ra.</i>	in <i>se.</i>		In <i>ra.</i>	in <i>se.</i>	
Hubiera	} sido or estado.	hubiese	Tivéra	} sido or estado.	tivesse
Hubieras		hubieses	Tivéras		tivesse
Hubiera		hubiese	Tivéra		tivesse
Hubieramos		hubiesemos	Tiveramos		tivessemos
Hubierais		hubieseis	Tivéreis		tivesseis
Hubieran		hubiesen	Tivérão		tivessem

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Be."

*Ser* and *Estar*.—There are in the Spanish, as in Portuguese, two verbs which signify *To be*; but they must not be used indiscriminately. } *Ser* and *Estar*. (Note a.)  
Same.

Note a.—D'Orsey, in his grammar of the Portuguese language, draws the distinction between *ser* and *estar* as follows (and the same remarks may apply to the Spanish verbs):—" *Está* is used for *is* when time, place, and circumstances are spoken of; but *é* is employed when a permanent quality is referred to—a *agua está quente*, the water is hot (temporarily); a *agua do mar é salgada*, sea water is salt (always). *Ser* expresses attributes or permanent qualities. *Sou doênte* is, I am always ill, an invalid; but *estou doênte* means, I am at present unwell. *Estar* to accidents or temporary states, qualities, positions, circumstances; as, *estou cansado*, I am tired."

## FRENCH.

138. This auxiliary serves to conjugate all passive verbs; as, *il est aimé*, he is loved.

139. When preceded by *ce*, the verb is placed either in the singular or plural, according to the number of the noun which follows, although the pronoun remains in the singular, as,

*C'est une femme*            it is a woman.

*Ce sont des femmes*      they are women.

*C'est* may be employed before the pronouns *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*; as, *c'est moi*, *c'est nous*, &c.; but before *eux* and *elles* the verb should be in the plural; as, *ce sont eux*; *ce sont elles*.

140. Sometimes, by an idiom of the language, *est* is in the capacity of an impersonal verb; as, *il est des hommes*, there are men.

## ITALIAN.

The auxiliary, *essere*, not only serves to conjugate all passive verbs, but, unlike the verb *to be* in the other languages, it is employed in the formation of its own compound tenses.

*Examples.*

*Egli è stato*                    he has been.

*Ella è stata*                    she has been.

*I signori sono stati*          the gentlemen have been.

*Le donne sono state*         the women have been.

*Remark.*—The third person singular of the present indicative, *è*, is distinguished by an accent from the conjunction *e*, and.



## SPANISH.

*Ser* serves to conjugate all passive verbs, as *él es amado*, he is loved, and is always employed when we wish to express some *absolute, inherent* quality which is not temporary or accidental (See Note *a*, p. 175.) } Same of Ser.

*Examples.*

Yo <i>soy</i> Frances	I am a Frenchman.
Él <i>es</i> soldado	he is a soldier.
Él <i>es</i> hermoso	he is handsome.
El hierro <i>es</i> duro	iron is hard.
<i>Es</i> de oro	it is of gold.

*Estar* is always used with the *present* participle, and serves in other cases to express any *accidental* condition, or anything which is liable to change. } Same.

*Examples.*

<i>Está</i> hablando	he is speaking.
<i>Estaba</i> presente	he was present.
<i>Estoy</i> triste	I am sad.
<i>Estan</i> malos	they are ill.

*Remark.*—The meaning of an adjective often varies according to the verb which accompanies it; as } Same remark.

<i>Es</i> malo	he is wicked.
<i>Está</i> malo	he is ill.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Eu <i>sou</i> francez	I am a Frenchman.
Elle <i>é</i> soldado	he is a soldier.
Ella <i>é</i> bonita	she is pretty.
O ferro <i>é</i> duro	iron is hard.
É de ouro	it is of gold.

*Examples.*

<i>Está</i> fallando	he is speaking.
<i>Estava</i> presente	he was present.
<i>Estou</i> triste	I am sad.
<i>Estão</i> doentes	they are ill.

## Models of French Regular Verbs.

## FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

1st in <i>er</i> .	2nd in <i>ir</i> .	3rd in <i>oir</i> .	4th in <i>re</i> .
Parler. To speak.	Finir. To finish.	Recevoir. To receive.	Rendre. To render.
Participle Present.			
Parlant. Speaking.	Finissant. Finishing.	Recevant. Receiving.	Rendant. Rendering.
Participle Past.			
Parlé. Spoken.	Finí. Finished.	Reçu. Received.	Rendu. Rendered.
Compounds.			
Avoir parlé. Ayant parlé.	Avoir fini. Ayant fini.	Avoir reçu. Ayant reçu.	Avoir rendu. Ayant rendu.

## Models of Italian Regular Verbs.

## THREE CONJUGATIONS.

Infinitive Mood.				
1st in <i>are</i> .	2nd in <i>ere</i> .	3rd in <i>ire</i> , 1st class.	3rd in <i>ire</i> , 2nd class.	
Parlare. To speak.	Temere. To fear.	Sentire. To hear.	Finire. To finish.	
Participle Present.				
Parlando. Speaking.	Temendo. Fearing.	Sentendo. Hearing.	} as Sentire.	
Participle Past.				
Parlato. Spoken.	Temuto. Feared.	Sentito. Heard.		
Compounds.				
Aver parlato. Avendo parlato.	Aver temuto. Avendo temuto.	Aver sentito. Avendo sentito.		

## Indicative Mood.

Present.			
Je parle. tu parles. il parle. nous parlons. vous parlez. ils parlent.	Je finis. tu finis. il finit. nous finissons. vous finissez. ils finissent.	Je reçois. tu reçois. il reçoit. nous recevons. vous recevez. ils reçoivent.	Je rends. tu rends. il rend. nous rendons. vous rendez. ils rendent.
Imperfect.			
Je parlais. tu parlais. il parlait. nous parlions. vous parliez. ils parlaient.	Je finissais. tu finissais. il finissait. nous finissions. vous finissiez. ils finissaient.	Je recevais. tu recevais. il recevait. nous recevions. vous receviez. ils recevaient.	Je rendais. tu rendais. il rendait. nous rendions. vous rendiez. ils rendaient.
Preterite.			
Je parlai. tu parlas. il parla. nous parlâmes. vous parlâtes. ils parlèrent.	Je finis. tu finis. il finit. nous finîmes. vous finîtes. ils finirent.	Je reçus. tu reçus. il reçut. nous reçûmes. vous reçûtes. ils reçurent.	Je rendis. tu rendis. il rendit. nous rendîmes. vous rendîtes. ils rendirent.

  

Present.			
Parlo. parli. parla. parliamo. parlate. parlano.	Temo. temi. teme. temiamo. temete. temono.	Sento. senti. sente. sentiamo. sentite. sentono.	Finisco. finisci. finisce. finiamo. finite. finiscono.
Imperfect.			
Parlava. parlavi. parlava. parlavamo. parlavate. parlavano.	Temeva. temevi. temeva. temevamo. temevate. temevano.	Sentiva. sentivi. sentiva. sentivamo. sentivate. sentivano.	} as Sentire.
Preterite.			
Parlai. parlasti. parlò. parlammo. parlaste. parlarono.	Temel. temesti. temè. tememmo. temeste. temerono.	Sentii. sentisti. sentì. sentimmo. sentiste. sentirono.	} idem.

Models of Spanish Regular Verbs.

Models of Portuguese Regular Verbs.

THREE CONJUGATIONS.

THREE CONJUGATIONS.

1st in <i>ar</i> .	2nd in <i>er</i> .
Hablar. To speak.	Temer. To fear.
Hablando. Speaking.	Participle Present. Temiendo. Fearing.
Hablado. Spoken.	Participle Past. Temido. Feared.
Haber hablado. Habiendo hablado.	Compounds. Haber temido. Habiendo temido.

Infinitive Mood.

3rd in <i>ir</i> .	1st in <i>ar</i> .
Sufrir. To suffer.	Amar. To love.
Sufriendo. Suffering.	Amando. Loving.
Sufrido. Suffered.	Amado. Loved.
Haber sufrido. Habiendo sufrido.	Ter amado. Tendo amado.

2nd in <i>er</i> .	3rd in <i>ir</i> .
Comer. To eat.	Admittir. To admit.
Participle Present. Comendo. Eating.	Admittindo. Admitting.
Participle Past. Comido Eaten.	Admittido. Admitted.
Compounds. Ter comido. Tendo comido.	Ter admittido. Tendo admittido.

	Present.
Hablo, hablas, habla. hablamos, hablais, hablan.	Temo, temes. teme. tememos. temeis. temen.
Hablaba, hablabas, hablaba, hablabamos, hablabais, hablaban.	Imperfect. Temia, temias. temia, temiamos. temiais. temian.
Hablé, hablaste, habló, hablamos, hablasteis, hablaron.	Preterite. Temí, temiste. temió, temimos. temisteis. temieron.

Indicative Mood.

Sufro, sufres, sufre. sufrimos, sufris, sufren.	Amo, amas, ama, amamos, amais, amão.
Sufria, sufrias, sufria, sufriamos, sufriais, sufrian.	Amava, amavas, amava, amavamos, amaveis, amavam.
Sufri, sufriste, sufrió, sufrimos, sufristeis, sufrieron.	Amei, amaste, amou, amámos, amastes, amirão.

Como, comes, come. comemos, comeis, comem.	Present. Admitto, admittes, admitte, admittimos, admittis, admittem.
Comia, comias, comia, comiamos, comieis, comião.	Imperfect. Admittia, admittias, admittia, admittiamos, admittieis, admittião.
Comi, comeste, comeu, comemos, comestes, comerão.	Preterite. Admitti, admittiste, admittio, admittistes, admittistes, admittirão.

Models of French and Italian Regular Verbs—*continued.*Indicative Mood—*continued.*

		Future.				Future.		} as <i>Sentire.</i>
Je parlerai. tu parleras. il parlera. nous parlerons. vous parlerez. ils parleront.	Je finirai. tu finiras. il finira. nous finirons. vous finirez. ils finiront.	Je recevrai. tu recevras. il recevra. nous recevrons. vous recevrez. ils recevront.	Je rendrai. tu rendras. il rendra. nous rendrons. vous rendrez. ils rendront.	Parlerò. parlerai. parlerà. parleremo. parlerete. parleranno.	Temerò. temerai. temerà. temeremo. temerete. temeranno.	Sentirò. sentirai. sentirà. sentiremo. sentirete. sentiranno.		

## Conditional Mood.

Je parlerais. tu parlerais. il parlerait. nous parlerions. vous parleriez. ils parleraient.	Je finirais. tu finirais. il finirait. nous finirions. vous finiriez. ils finiraient.	Je recevrais. tu recevrais. il recevrait. nous recevriions. vous recevriez. ils recevraient.	Je rendrais. tu rendrais. il rendrait. nous rendrions. vous rendriez. ils rendraient.	Parlerei. parleresti. parlerebbe. parleremmo. parlereste. parlerebbero.	Temerei. temeresti. temerebbe. temeremmo. temereste. temerebbero.	Sentirei. sentiresti. sentirebbe. sentiremmo. sentireste. sentirebbero.	} idem.
--	--	---	--	--	--	--	---------

## Imperative Mood.

Parle. qu'il parle. parlons. parlez. qu'ils parlent.	Finis. qu'il finisse. finissons. finissez. qu'ils finissent.	Reçois. qu'il reçoive. recevons. recevez. qu'ils reçoivent.	Rends. qu'il rende. rendons. rendez. qu'ils rendent.	Parla. parli. parliamo. parlate. parlino.	Temi. tema. temiamo. temete. temano.	Senti. senta. sentiamo. sentite. sentano.	} Finisci. finisca. finiamo. finite. finiscano.
--	--	---	--	---	--	---	---

## Subjunctive Mood.

		Present.				Present.		
Que je parle. que tu parles. qu'il parle. que nous parlions. que vous parliez. qu'ils parlent.	Que je finisse. que tu finisses. qu'il finisse. que nous finissions. que vous finissiez. qu'ils finissent.	Que je reçoive. que tu reçoives. qu'il reçoive. que nous recevions. que vous receviez. qu'ils reçoivent.	Que je rende. que tu rendes. qu'il rende. que nous rendions. que vous rendiez. qu'ils rendent.	Parli. parli. parli. parliamo. parliate. parlino.	Tema. tema. tema. temiamo. temiate. temano.	Senta. senta. senta. sentiamo. sentiate. sentano.	Finisca. finisca. finisca. finiamo. finiate. finiscano.	

Models of Spanish and Portuguese Regular Verbs—*continued.*Indicative Mood—*continued.*

Hablaré. hablaras. hablará. hablaremos. hablareis. hablarán.	Future. Temeré. temeras. temerá. temeremos. temereis. temerán.	Sufriré. sufriras. sufrirá. sufriremos. sufrireis. sufrirán.	Amarei. amarás. amará. amaremos. amareis. amarão.	Future. Comerei. comerás. comerá. comeremos. comereis. comerão.	Admittirei. admittirás. admittirá. admittiremos. admittireis. admittirão.
---	--	---	--	---	--

## Conditional Mood.

Hablaría. hablarías. hablaría. hablaríamos. hablaríais. hablarían.	Temería. temerías. temería. temeríamos. temeríais. temerían.	Sufriría. sufrirías. sufriría. sufriríamos. sufriríais. sufrirían.	Amaría. amarías. amaría. amaríamos. amaríais. amarían.	Comería. comerías. comería. comeríamos. comeríais. comerían.	Admittiría. admittirías. admittiría. admittiríamos. admittiríais. admittirían.
---	---	---	---	---	---

## Imperative Mood.

Habla. hable. hablemos. hablad. hablen.	teme. tema. temámos. temed. teman.	Sufre. sufrá. suframos. sufrid. sufran.	Ama. ame. amémos. amai. amem.	Come. coma. comámos. comei. comão.	Admitte. admitta. admittamos. admitti. admittão.
---	--	---	---	--	--

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present. Hable hables hable hablemos	Future. si hablare. si habláres. si hablare. si habláremos.	Present. Tema temas tema temamos	Future. si temiere. si temieres. si temiere. si temiéremos.	Present. Sufrá sufras suframos	Future. si sufriere. si sufrieres. si sufriere. si sufriéremos.	Present. Ame ames ame amemos	Future. se amar. se amares. se amar. se amáremos.	Present. Coma comas coma comámos	Future. se comer. se comeres. se comer. se comeremos.	Present. Admitta admittas admitta admittamos	Future. se admittir. se admittires. se admittir. se admittiremos.
hableis hablen	si habláreis. si habláren.	temais teman	si temiéreis. si temieren.	sufrais sufran	si sufriereis. si sufrieren.	ameis amem	se amardes. se amarem.	comais comão	se comerdes. se comerem.	admittais admittão	se admittirdes. se admittirem.

Models of French and Italian Regular Verbs—*continued.*Subjunctive Mood—*continued.*

## Imperfect.

Que je parlasse.	Que je finisse.	Que je reçusse.	Que je rendisse.
que tu parlasses.	que tu finisses.	que tu reçusses.	Que tu rendisses.
qu'il parlât.	qu'il finît.	qu'il reçût.	qu'il rendît.
que nous parlâ-	que nous finis-	que nous reçus-	que nous rendis-
sions.	sions.	sions.	sions.
que vous parlâ-	que vous finissiez.	que vous reçus-	que vous rendis-
siez.	siez.	siez.	siez.
qu'ils parlassent.	qu'ils finissent.	qu'ils reçussent.	qu'ils rendissent.

## Imperfect.

Parlassi.	Temessi.	Sentissi.	} as <i>Sentire.</i>
parlassi.	temessi.	sentissi.	
parlasse.	temesse.	sentisse.	
parlassimo.	temessimo.	sentissimo.	
parlaste.	temeste.	sentiste.	
parlassero.	temessero.	sentissero.	

## Remarks on Regular Verbs.

## FRENCH.

The second person singular of all the moods and tenses (except the imperative, first conjugation) terminates in *s*.

In the preterite of all conjugations, the first and second persons plural take a circumflex accent on the first vowel of the last syllable.

In the future, the first person singular always ends in *ai*, and the same person of the conditional in *ais*: beginners are apt to confound the two.

In the imperfect of the subjunctive, the third person singular always takes a circumflex accent on the last vowel.

## ITALIAN.

In the first conjugation, the first person singular of the imperfect indicative sometimes ends in *o*; but this is now considered vulgar; it is better to say *io parlava* than *io parlavo*.

Note that in the future and conditional of verbs in *are* the *a* is changed into *e*: as, *parlare, parlero, parlerai*.

In the second conjugation, *temère* is the only regular verb having the accent (though not always written) falling on the last *e* but one.

Verbs which end in *care* and *gare* take the letter *h* before *e* and *i*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c* and *g*: as, *cercare, to seek; cercherò, I will seek.*

Models of Spanish and Portuguese Regular Verbs—*continued*.Subjunctive Mood—*continued*.

Imperfect.				Imperfect.							
In <i>ra</i> .	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i> .	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i> .	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i> .	in <i>se</i> .				
Hablara	hablase.	Temiera	temiese.	Sufriera	sufriese.	Amára	amasse.	Coméra	comesse.	Admittira	admittisse.
hablaras	hablases.	temieras	temieses.	sufrieras	sufrieses.	amáras	amasses.	coméras	comeses.	admittiras	admittisses.
hablara	hablase.	temiera	temiese.	sufriera	sufriese.	amára	amasse.	coméra	comesse.	admittira	admittisse.
habláramos	hablásemos.	temieramos	temiésemos.	sufrieramos	sufriesemos.	amáramos	amásemos.	comeramos	comessemos.	admittiramos	admittissemos.
hablárais	habláreis.	temierais	temiéreis.	sufrierais	sufrieseis.	amáreis	amaseis.	comêreis	comesseis.	admittiréis	admittisseis.
habláran	hablasen.	temieran	temiesen.	sufrieran	sufriesen.	amárao	amassem.	comêrao	comessem.	admittirão	admittissem.

## Remarks on Regular Verbs.

## SPANISH.

The conjugations show that in the subjunctive mood there are certain tenses in Spanish which are not possessed by the French and Italians: this is fully explained under the heading of subjunctive mood, p. 249. } Same.

In Spanish, as in other languages, there are many regular verbs which require a change in their radical letters, in order to preserve the hard or soft sounds of certain particular consonants. } Same.

Verbs ending in

*car* change *c* into *qu* before *e*.

*cer* and *cir* change *c* into *z* before the letters *a* and *o*.

Same as Spanish.

} Verbs in *cer* make *ç* before *a* and *o*.

## PORTUGUESE.

## FRENCH.

For examples on these remarks refer to the conjugations. Verbs having the radical *c* soft give it the cedilla (*ç*) before *a*, *o*, or *u*: as, *recevoir*; *reçois*, *reçus*; *menacer*, *menaçais*.

Verbs ending in *eler* and *eter* in the infinitive, double the *l* or *t* before *e* mute: as, *jeter*, to throw; *je jette*, I throw.

Verbs in *ger* retain the *e* before *a* or *o* solely to preserve the soft sound of the *g*: as, *venger*, to revenge; *nous vengeons*.

Note *a*.—Corticelli divides regular verbs into four conjugations, making *leggere*, to read, a form of the third; this will be found among the *irregular* verbs, to which it more conveniently belongs.

Note *b*.—There has been much discussion about the termination of the third person plural in several tenses of verbs, whether it should be written *ão* or *am*. The latter is now the favourite mode.

Luiz A. Rebello da Silva, in a work published (Lisbon, 1862) for the Portuguese Academy of Sciences, uses *am* for all verbs

## ITALIAN.

Those in *ciare* and *giare* drop the *i* before *e*, or when meeting another *i*: as, *mangiare*, to eat; *mangerò*, I will eat: while verbs ending in *chiare* and *gliare* drop the *i* only before another letter *i*: as, *pigliare*, to take; *tu pigli*. Verbs in *cire* keep the *i* before *a* and *o*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c*: as *cucire*, to sew; *cucio*, I sew.

(Note *a*.)



## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

Verbs ending in

*ger* and *gir* change *g* into *j* before the letters *a* } Same.  
and *o*.

*quir* change *qu* into *c* before the letters *a* and *o*.

*quir* suppress the *u* before the letters *a* and *o*.

*gar* add *u* before the letter *e*.

*zar* change the *z* into *c* when coming before the } Same.  
letter *e*.

Verbs in *oer* change *o* into *ô* before *a* and *o*.

Same.

Same.

(Note *b*.)

except *são* and *estão*. D'Orsey (1860) writes:—"The third person plural may end *ão* or *am*, e.g. *são, sam*; *estão, eram*. The former is more usual, the latter gradually coming into practice."

The student is recommended to adopt the termination most common in the place where his knowledge of the language may be required. This remark can also apply to the third person singular of the preterite in the second and third conjugations, where the letter *u* is now more frequently employed instead of *o*: as, *comeu*.

With these observations, it has not been thought necessary to alter the generally adopted method of conjugation.

## Irregular Verbs.

Pouvoir.		FRENCH. Infinitive. Pouvant.		Able (be.)		ITALIAN. Infinitive. Potendo.		Potuto.			
		Indicative Present.		Pu.	Potere.	Indicative Present.					
Puis, or peux	peux	peut	pouvons	pouvez	peuvent	Posso	puoi	può	possiamo	potete	possono
Pouvais	pouvais	pouvait	pouvions	pouviez	pouvaient						
Pus	pus	put	pûmes	pûtes	purent						
			Future.								
Pourrai	pourras	pourra	pourrons	pourrez	pourront	Potrò	potrai	potrà	potremo.	potrete	potranno
			Conditional.								
Pourrais	pourrais	pourrait	pourrions	pourriez	pourraient	Potrei	potresti	potrebbe	potremmo.	potreste	potrebbero
			Subjunctive Present.								
Puisse	puisses	puisse	puissions	puissiez	puissent	Possa	possa.	possa	possiamo	possiate	possano
			Imperfect.								
Pusse	pusses	pût	pussions	pussiez	pussent						

Acquérir.		Infinitive. Acquérant.		Acquis.		Acquire.
		Indicative Present.				}
Acquiers	acquiers	acquiert	acquérons	acquérez	acquièrent	
			Imperfect.			
Acquérais	acquérais	acquérait	acquérions	acquériez	acquéraient	
			Preterite.			
Acquis	acquis	acquît	acquîmes	acquîtes	acquirent	
			Future.			
Acquerrai	acquerras	acquerra	acquerrons	acquerez	acquerront	
			Conditional.			
Acquerrais	acquerrais	acquerrait	acquerrions	acqueriez	acquerraient	
			Imperative.			
	acquiers	acquière	acquérons	acquérez	acquièrent	
			Subjunctive Present.			
Acquière	acquières	acquière	acquérions	acquériez	acquièrent	
			Imperfect.			
Acquisse	acquisses	acquît	acquissions	acquissiez	acquissent	

Acquistare—Regular.

Irregular Verbs.

		SPANISH.		Able (be.)		PORTUGUESE.					
Poder.		Infinitive. Pudiendo.		Podido.		Poder.		Podido.			
		Indicative present.				Indicative present.					
Puedo	puedes	puede	podemos	podeis	poden	Posso	poles	pode	podemos	podeis	podem
Puede	podiste	pudo	Preterite. pudimos	podisteis	podieron	Puede	podeste, or podéste	Preterite { ponde, or } { pôde }	podemos, or podemos	podestes	puderão, or poderão
Podré	podras	podrá	Future. podremos	podreis	podran						
Podria	podrias	podría	Conditional. podríamos	podriais	podrian						
Pueda	puedas	pueda	Subjunctive present. podamos	podais	podan	Possa	possas	Subjunctive present. possa	possamos	possais	possão
Pudiera	puieras	puiera	Imperfect. pudiéramos	puiérais	puieran	Pudera	puderas	Imperfect. pudera	pudéramos	puderais	puderão
Pudiese	puieses	puiese	Future. pudiesemos	puieseis	puiesen	Pudesse	pudieses	Future. pudesse	pudiesemos	pudieseis	pudiessem
Pudiere	puieres	puiere	Future. pudieremos	puiereis	puieren	Puder	puderes	Future. puder	pudermos	puderdes	pudermos

Acquire.

Adquirir.		Infinitive. Adquiriendo.		Adquirido.	
		Indicative present.			
Adquiero	adquieres	adquiere	adquirimos	adquiris	adquieren
—	adquiere	Imperative.		adquirid	adquieran
Adquiera	adquieras	adquiera	adquiramos	adquirais	adquieran

Adquirir—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Appear.

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.					
Paraître—Regular.		Apparire.		Infinitive. Apparendo.	Apparito, or Apparso.		
		Apparisco	apparisci	Indicative Present. { apparisce } { appare }	appariamo	apparite { appariscono { appaiono }	
		Appari Apparvi Apparsi	} apparisti	Preterite. { apparì } { apparve }	apparimmo	appariste { apparirono { apparvero }	
				Imperative. apparisci	apparisca	appariamo	apparite appariscono
			Apparisca } Appaia }	apparisca	apparisca	appariamo	appariate appariscano
				Subjunctive Present.			

## Born (be.)

Naître.		Infinitive. Naissant.	Né.	Nascere.	Infinitive. Nascendo.	Nato.
Nais	nais	naît	naissent			
		Indicative present. naissions	naissez			
Naissais	naissais	naissait	naissaient			
		Imperfect. naissions	naissiez			
Naquis	naquis	naquit	naquirent	Nacqui	nascesti	nacqueste
		Preterite. naquimes	naquîtes	nacque	nascemmo	nacquero
Naîtraî	naîtras	naîtra	naîtront			
		Future. naîtrons	naîtrez			
Naîtrais	naîtrais	naîtrait	naîtraient			
		Conditional. naîtrions	naîtriez			
	nais	naïsse	naissent			
		Imperative naissions	naissez			
Naisse	naisses	naïsse	naissent			
		Subjunctive present. naissions	naissiez			
Naquisse	naquisses	naquit	naquissent			
		Imperfect. naquissions	naquissiez			

Appear.

PORTUGUESE.

		SPANISH.		Parecido.	
Parecer.		Infinitive. Pareciendo.			
Parezco	pareces.	Indicative present.		pareceis	parecen
		parece	parecemos		
—		Imperative.		pareced	parezcan
	parece	parezca	parezcamos		
Parezca	parezcas	Subjunctive present.		parezcais	parezcan
		parezca	parezcamos		

Apparecer—Regular.

Except that verbs in *cer* make *ç* (soft) before *a* and *o*.

Born (be.)

		SPANISH.		Nacido.	
Nacer.		Infinitive. Naciendo.			
Nazco	naces	Indicative Present.		naceis	nacen
		nace	nacemos		
—		Imperative.		naced	nazcan
	nace	nazca	nazcámos		
Nazca	nazcas	Subjunctive Present.		názcais	názcan
		nazca	nazcámos		

Nacer—Regular.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

## Choisir—Regular.

## Choose.

## Scegliere.

Sceglia }  
Scelga }

scegli

Scelsi

scegliesti

scegli

Sceglia }  
Scelga }

scelga

## ITALIAN.

Infinitive.  
Scegliendo.  
Indicative present.

## Scelto.

sceglie

scegliamo

scegliete

{scegliono  
{scelgono

Preterite.

scelse sceglimmo

sceglieste

scelsero

Imperative.

{sceglia }  
{scelga }

scegliamo

scegliete

{scegliano  
{scelgano

Subjunctive present.

sceлга

scegliamo

scegliate

idem.

## Come.

## Venir.

Infinitive.  
Venant.

## Venu.

## Venire.

Infinitive.  
Venendo.

## Venuto.

Venir.		Infinitive. Venant.		Venu.		Venire.		Infinitive. Venendo.		Venuto.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative present.			
Viens	viens	vient	venons	venez	viennent	Vengo	vieni	viene	veniamo	venite	vengono
Venais	venais	venait	venions	veniez	venaient						
Vins	vins	vint	vinmes	vintes	vinrent	Venni	venisti	venne	venimmo	veniste	vennero
Viendral	viendras	viendra	viendrons	viendrez	viendront	Verrò	verrai	verrà	verremo	verrete	verranno
Viendrais	viendrais	viendrait	viendrions	viendriez	viendraient	Verrei	verresti	verrebbe	verremmo	verreste	verrebbero
	viens	viene	venons	venez	viennent		vieni	venga	veniamo	venite	vengano
Vienne	viennes	viene	venions	veniez	viennent	Venga	venga	venga	veniamo	veniate	vengano
Vinsse	vinsses	vint	vinssions	vinssiez	vinssent						

Choose.

		SPANISH.						PORTUGUESE.		
Elegir.		Infinitive. Elegiendo.		Elegido.		Eleger.		Infinitive. Elegendo.		
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.		
Elijo	eliges	elige	elegimos	elegis	eligen	Elejo	eleges	elege	elegemos	Elegido, or Eleito.
										elegeis elegem
Elegí	elegiste	Preterite. elegió elegimos		elegisteis	eligieron					
	elige	Imperative. elija elijamos		elegid	elijan					
Elija	elijas	Subjunctive Present. elija elijamos		elijais	elijan	Eleja	elejas	Subjunctive Present. eleja elejamos		elijais elejão
Eligiera	eligieras	Imperfect. eligiera eligiéramos		eligierais	eligieran					
Eligiese	eligieses	eligiese eligiésemos		eligieseis	eligiesen					
Eligiere	eligieres	Future. eligiere eligiéremos		eligiereis	eligieren					

Come.

		Infinitive. Viniedo.		Venido.				Infinitive. Vindo.		Vindo.	
Venir.		Indicative Present.				Vir.		Indicative Present.			
Vengo	vienes	viene	venimos	venis	vienen	Venho	vens	vem	vimos	vindes	vêm
Vine	veniste	Preterite. vino venimos		venisteis	vinieron	Vinha	vinhas	Imperfect. vinha vinhamos		vinheis	vinhão
Vendré	vendras	Future. vendrá vendrémos		vendreis	vendran	Vim	vieste	Preterite. veio vieramos		viestes	vierão
Vendría	vendrias	Conditional. vendría vendriamos		vendriaís	vendrian						
	ven	Imperative. venga vengamos		venid	vengan			Imperative. vem venha venhamos		vinde	venhão
Venga	vengas	Subjunctive Present. venga vengamos		vengais	vengan	Venha	venhas	Subjunctive Present. venha venhamos		venhais	venhão
Viniera	vinieras	Imperfect. viniera viniéramos		vinierais	vinieran	Viera	vieras	Imperfect. viera vieramos		viereis	vierão
Viniese	vinieses	viniese viniésemos		vinieseis	viniesen	Viesse	viesses	viesse viessemos		viesseis	viessem
Viniere	vinieres	Future. viniere viniéremos		viniereis	vinieren	Vier	vieres	Future. vier viermos		vierdes	vierem





Conclude.

PORTUGUESE.

SPANISH.

Infinitive.

Concluyendo.

Indicative Present.

Concluir.			Concluido or Concluso.	
Concluyo	concluyes	concluye	concluimos	concluis concluyen

Imperative.

concluya concluyamos

Subjunctive Present.

	concluye	concluya	concluyamos	concluid concluyan
Concluya	concluyas	concluya	concluyamos	concluyais concluyan

Concluir—Regular.

Conduct.

Infinitive.

Conduciendo.

Indicative Present.

Conducir.			Conducido.	
Conduzco	conduces	conduce	conducimos	conducis conducen

Preterite.

condujo condujimos

Conduje	condujiste	condujo	condujimos	condujisteis condujeron
---------	------------	---------	------------	-------------------------

Imperative.

conduzca conduzcamos

Subjunctive Present.

	conduce	conduzca	conduzcamos	conducid conduzcan
Conduzca	conduzcas	conduzca	conduzcamos	conduzcais conduzcan

Imperfect.

condujera condujéramos

Future.

Condujera	condujeras	condujera	condujéramos	condujérais condujéran
Condujese	condujeses	condujese	condujésemos	condujeseis condujesen
Condujere	condujeres	condujere	condujéremos	condujéreis condujeren

Conduzir—Regular.

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.				Die.		ITALIAN.			
Mourir.		Infinitive. Mourant.		Mort.		Morire.		Infinitive. Morendo.		Morto.	
Meurs	meurs	Indicative Present.		mourez	meurent	Muoio, or } muoro }	muori	Indicative Present.		morite	{ muoiono muorono
		meurt	mourons					muore	moriamo		
Mourais	mourais	Imperfect.		mouriez	mouraient						
		mourait	mourions								
Mourus	mourus	Preterite.		mourûtes	moururent						
		mourut	mourûmes								
Mourrai	mourras	Future.		mourrez	mourront	Moriro, or } morirò }	morrai	Future.		morrete	morranno
		mourra	mourrons					morrà	morremo		
Mourrais	mourrais	Conditional.		mourriez	mourraient	Morrei	morresti	Conditional.		morreste	morrebbero
		mourrait	mourrions					morrebbe	morremmo		
	meurs	Imperative.		mourez	meurent		muori	Imperative.		morite	muorano
		meure	mourons					muora	moriamo		
Meure	meures	Subjunctive Present.		mouriez	meurent	Muora	moura	Subjunctive Present.		moriate	muorano
		meure	mourions					muora	moriamo		
Mourusse	mourusses	Imperfect.		mourussiez	mourussent						
		mourût	mourussions								

## Do or Make.

Faire.		Infinitive. Faisant.		Fait.	Fare.	Infinitive. Facendo.		Fatto.			
Fais	fais	Indicative Present.		faites	font	Fo, or faccio	fai	fa	facciamo	fate	fanno
		fait	faisons						facciamo		
Faisais	faisais	Imperfect.		faisiez	faisaient	Faceva, &c.		Imperfect.			
		faisait	faisions								
Fis	fis	Preterite.		fites	firent	Feci	facesti	fece	facemmo	faceste	fecero
		fit	fimes						facemmo		

		SPANISH.		Die.			
Morir.		Infinitive. Muriendo.		Muerto.			
		Indicative Present.					
Muero	mueres	muere	morimos	moris	mueren		
Morf	moriste	murió	morimos	moristeis	murieron		
		Imperative.					
	muere	muera	muramos	morid	mueran		
Muera	mueras	Subjunctive Present.					
		muera	muramos	murais	mueran		
Muriera	murieras	Imperfect.					
Muriése	murieses	muriera	murieramos	murierais	murieran		
		muriese	muriésemos	muriéseis	muriesen		
Muriere	murieres	Future.					
		muriere	murieremos	muriereis	murieren		

PORTUGUESE.

Morrer—Regular.

Do or Make.

Hacer.		Infinitive. Haciendo.		Hecho.		Fazer.		Infinitive. Fazendo.		Feito.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Hago	haces	hace	hacemos	haceis	hacen	Faço	fazes	faz	fazemos	fazeis	fazem
Hice	hiciste	hizo	hicimos	hicisteis	hicieron	Fiz	fizeste	fez	fizemos	fizestes	fizerão

		FRENCH.				Do or Make— <i>continued</i> .		ITALIAN.			
<b>Fera</b>	feras	fera	Future. ferons	ferez	feront	Farò, &c.		Future.			
<b>Ferais</b>	ferais	ferait	Conditional. ferions	feriez	feraient	Farei, &c.		Conditional.			
	fais	fasse	Imperative. faisons	faites	fassent	fa	faccia	Imperative. facciamo	fate	facciano	
<b>Fasse</b>	fasses	fasse	Subjunctive Present. fassions	fassiez	fassent	Faccia	faccia	Subjunctive Present. faccia facciamo		facciate	facciano
<b>Fisse</b>	fisses	fit	Imperfect. fissions	fissiez	fissent	Facessi	facessi	Imperfect. facesse facessimo		faceste	facessero

## Drink.

		Infinitive. Buvant.		Bu		Bere, or Bevere.		Infinitive. Bevendo.		Bevuto.	
<b>Bois</b>	bois	boit	Indicative Present. buvons	buvez	boivent	Beo, Bevo, &c.		Indicative Present.			
<b>Buvais</b>	buvais	buvait	Imperfect. buvions	buviez	buvaient	Beveva, &c.		Imperfect.			
<b>Bus</b>	bus	but	Preterite. bûmes	bûtes	burent	Bevvi	bevesti	bevve	Preterite. bevemmo	beveste	bevvero
<b>Boirai</b>	boiras	boira	Future. boirons	boirez	boiront	Berò, Bevéro, &c.		Future.			
<b>Boirais</b>	boirais	boirait	Conditional. boirions	boiriez	boiraient	Berei, Beverel, &c.		Conditional.			
	bois	boive	Imperative. buvons	buvez	boivent		bevi, &c.	Imperative.			
<b>Boive</b>	boives	boive	Subjunctive Present. buvions	buviez	boivent	Beva, &c.		Subjunctive Present.			
<b>Busse</b>	busses	bût	Imperfect. bussions	bussiez	bussent	Bevessi, &c.		Imperfect.			

Do or Make—*continued.*

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.					
		Future.				Future.					
Haré	haras	hará	haremos	hareis	haran	Farei	farás	fará	faremos	fareis	farão
		Conditional.				Conditional.					
Haria	harias	haria	haríamos	hariais	harian	Faria	farias	faria	fariamos	fariéis	farião
		Imperative.				Imperative.					
	haz	haga	hagámos	haced	hagan		faze	faça	façamos	fazei	fação
		Subjunctive Present.				Subjunctive Present.					
Haga	hagas	haga	hagamos	hagais	hagan	Faça	faças	faça	façamos	façais	fação
		Imperfect.				Imperfect.					
Hiciera	hicieras	hiciera	hiciéramos	hiciérais	hiciéran	Fizera	fizeras	fizera	fizeramos	fizeis	fizerão
Hiciese	hicieses	hiciese	hiciésemos	hiciéseis	hiciésen	Fizesse	fizesses	fizesse	fizessemos	fizesseis	fizessem
		Future.				Future.					
Hiciere	hiciéres	hiciere	hiciéremos	hiciéreis	hicieren	Fizer	fizeres	fizer	fizermos	fizerdes	fizerem

Drink.

Beber—Regular.

Beber—Regular.

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.				Extinguish.		ITALIAN.					
Éteindre.		Infinitive. Éteignant.		Éteint.		Spengere, or Spegner.		Infinitive. Spengendo, or Spegnendo.		Spento.			
Éteins	éteins	Indicative Present.		éteignez	éteignent	Spengo	spegni	Indicative Present.		spegnete	spengono		
Éteignais	éteignais	Imperfect.		éteigniez	éteignaient			Preterite.					
Éteignis	éteignis	Preterite.		éteignîtes	éteignirent	Spensi	spegnesti	Preterite.		spegneste	spensero		
Éteindrai	éteindras	Future.		éteindrez	éteindront			Imperative.					
Éteindra	éteindra	Conditional.		éteindriez	éteindraient			Imperative.					
Éteindraient	éteindraient	Imperative.		éteignez'	éteignent		spegni	spenga	spegniamo	spegnete	{ spegnano, spengano		
Éteigne	éteignes	Subjunctive Present.		éteigniez	éteignent	Spenga } Spegna }	spegna	Subjunctive Present.		spegna	spegniamo	spegniate	{ spegnano, spengano
Éteignisse	éteignisses	Imperfect.		éteigniez	éteignissent								

## Fall.

Tomber—Regular.

}	Cadere.		Infinitive. Cadendo.		Caduto.	
	Caddi	cadesti	cadde	cademmo	cadeste	caddero
	Cadrò Caderò	} &c.	Preterite. Future.			

## VERBS.

## Extinguish.

## SPANISH.

Infinitive.  
Extinguir, or Apagar.

The irregularity consists in the general rule, viz. :—  
Verbs ending in *guir* drop the *u* before *a* or *o*.  
" " *gar* add *u* before *e*.

## PORTUGUESE.

Infinitive.  
Extinguir.

The irregularity consists in the general rule, viz. :—  
Verbs ending in *guir* drop the *u* before *a* or *o*.

## Fall.

Caer.	Infinitive. Cayendo.	Caido.	Cahir.	Infinitive. Cahindo.	Cahido.
Caigo	caes Indicative Present. cae caemos	caeis caen	Cayo*	cahe Indicative Present. cahimos	cahis cahem
Caf	caiste Preterite. cayó caimos	caisteis cayéron			

\* It is also written *caio*, *caia*, &c.

Fall—continued.

FRENCH.

ITALIAN.  
Conditional.Cadrei,  
Caderei, } &c.

Tomber—Regular.

Feel.

Sentir.		Infinitive. Sentant.		Senti.	
Indicative Present.					
Sens	sens	sent	sentons	sentez	sentent
Imperfect.					
Sentais	sentais	sentait	sentions	sentiez	sentaient
Preterite.					
Sentis	sentis	sentit	sentimes	sentites	sentirent
Future.					
Sentirai	sentiras	sentira	sentirons	sentirez	sentiront
Conditional.					
Sentirais	sentirais	sentirait	sentirions	sentiriez	sentiraient
Imperative.					
	sens	sente	sentons	sentez	sentent
Subjunctive Present.					
Sente	sentés	sente	sentions	sentiez	sentent
Imperfect.					
Sentisse	sentisses	sentit	sentissions	sentissiez	sentissent

Sentire—Regular.



Fall—continued.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

	cae	caiga	Imperative. caigamos	caed	caigan						
Caiga	caigas	caiga	Subjunctive Present. caigamos	caigais	caigan	Caya	cayas	Subjunctive Present. caya	cayamos	cayais	cayão
Cayera	cayeras	cayera	Imperfect. cayéramos	cayerais	cayeran						
Cayese	cayeses	cayese	cayésemos	cayéseis	cayesen						
Cayere	cayeres	cayere	Future. cayéremos	cayéreis	cayeren						

Feel.

	Sentir.		Infinitive. Sintiendo.		Sentido.		Sentir.		Infinitive. Sentindo. 1		Sentido.
Siento	sientes	siente	Indicative Present. sentimos	sentis	sienten	Sinto	sentes	sente	Indicative Present. sentimos	sentis	sentem
Senti	sentiste	sintió	Preterite. sentimos	sentisteis	sintieron						

	siente	sienta	Imperative. sintamos	sentid	sientan						
Sienta	sientas	sienta	Subjunctive Present. sintamos	sintais	sientan	Sinta	sintas	Subjunctive Present. sinta	sintamos	sintais	sintão
Sintiera	sintieras	sintiera	Imperfect. sintieramos	sintierais	sintieran						
Sintiese	sintieses	sintiese	sintiésemos	sintieseis	sintiesen						
Sintiere	sintieres	sintiere	Future. sintiéremos	sintiereis	sintieren						

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.		Flee.		ITALIAN.	
Fuir.		Infinitive.		Fui.		Infinitive.	
		Fuyant.				Fuggendo.	
		Indicative Present.				Indicative Present.	
Fuis	fuis	fuit	fuyons	fuyez	fuient	Fuggo, &c.	
Fuyais	fuyais	fuyait	fuyions	fuyiez	fuyaient		
Fuis	fuis	fuit	fuimes	fuïtes	fuirent		
Fuirai	fuiras	fuirai	fuirons	fuires	fuiront		
Fuirais	fuirais	fuirait	fuirions	fuiriez	fuiraient		
	fuis	fuie	fuyons	fuyez	fuient	fuggi, &c.	Imperative.
Fuie	fuies	fuie	fuyions	fuyiez	fuient	Fugga, &c.	Subjunctive Present.
Fuisse	fuisses	fût	fuissions	fuissiez	fuissent		

## Gather.

Cueillir.		Infinitive.		Cueilli.		Cogliere.		Infinitive.		Colto.	
		Cueillant.						Cogliendo.			
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillons	cueillez	cueillent	Colgo	} cogli	coglie	cogliamo	cogliete	{ colgono { cogliono
Cueillais	cueillais	cueillait	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillient	Coglieva, &c.			Imperfect.		
Cueillis	cueillis	cueillit	cueillimes	cueillites	cueillirent	Colsi	cogliesti	colse	cogliemmo	coglieste	colsero
Cueillerai	cueilleras	cueillera	cueillerons	cueillerez	cueilleront	Cogliero, &c.			Future.		
Cueillerais	cueillerais	cueillerait	cueillerions	cueilleriez	cueilleraient	Coglierei, &c.			Conditional.		
	cueille	cueille	cueillons	cueillez	cueillent		cogli	colga	cogliamo	cogliete	colgano
Cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillent	Colga	colga	colga	cogliamo	cogliate	colgano
Cueillisse	cueillisses	cueillit	cueillissions	cueillissiez	cueillissent	Cogliessi, &c.			Imperfect.		

		SPANISH.		Flee.			PORTUGUESE.				
Huir.		Infinitive. Huyendo.		Huido.			Fugir.		Fugido.		
		Indicative Present.					Indicative Present.				
Huyo	huyes	huye	huimos	huis	huyen	Fujo	foges	foge	fugimos	fugis	fogem
Huí	huiste	huyó	Preterite. huimos	huisteis	huyeron						
	huye	huya	Imperative. huyámos	huid	huyan		foge	fuja	Imperative. fujamos	fugi	fujão
Huya	huyas	huya	Subjunctive Present. huyamos	huyais	huyan	Fuja	fujas	fuja	Subjunctive Present. fujamos	fujais	fujão
Huyera	huyeras	huyera	Imperfect. huyéramos	huyerais	huyeran						
Huyese	huyeses	huyese	huyesemos	huyeseis	huyesen						
Huyere	huyeres	huyere	Future. huyeremos	huyereis	huyeren						

Gather.

Colegir—Like Elegir, To Choose.

Colhêr—Regular.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

## Donner—Regular.

## Give.

		Dare.	ITALIAN.		Dato.
			Infinitive.		
			Dando.		
			Indicative Present.		
Do	dai	dà	diamo	date	danno
Detti	} desti		Preterite.	deste	{dettero
Diedi			{diede		
		Darò, &c.	Future.		
		Darei, &c.	Conditional.		
		dà	Imperative.	date	diano
			diamo		
Dia	dia	dia	Subjunctive Present.	diate	diano
			diamo		
Dessi	dessi	desse	Imperfect.	deste	dessero
			dessimo		

## Go.

Aller.		Infinitive.	Allé.		Andare.	Infinitive.	Andato.			
		Allant.				Andando.				
		Indicative Present.				Indicative Present.				
Vais	vas	va	allons	allez	vont	Vo, or vado, vai	va	andiamo	andate	vanno
Allais	allais	allaît	Imperfect.	allions	allaient					
Allai	allas	alla	Preterite.	allâmes	allèrent					
			allâmes							
Irai	iras	ira	Future.	irez	iront	Andrò, &c.	Future.			
			irez							
Irais	irais	irait	Conditional.	iriez	iraient	Andrei, &c.	Conditional.			
			iriez							

Give.

		SPANISH.						PORTUGUESE.	
		Infinitive.	Dando.	Dado.		Dar.	Infinitive.		Dado.
		Indicative Present.				Indicative Present.			
Dar.		da	damos	dais	dan	Dou	dás	dá	damos
		Preterite.				Preterite.			
Dí	diste	dió	dímos	dísteis	dieron	Dei	deste	deu, or deu	demos
		Imperfect.				Imperative.			
		dieras	dieras	dierais	dieran		dá	dê	demos
Diera	dieras	diera	dieramos	dierais	dieran	Dê	dês	dê	demos
Diese	dieses	diese	diésemos	diésteis	diesen	Dê	dês	dê	demos
		Future.				Imperfect.			
		dieres	dieremos	dieréis	dieren	Dêra	deras	dera	dêramos
Diere	dieres	diere	dieremos	dieréis	dieren	Desse	desses	desse	dêssamos
		Future.				Future.			
		dieres	dieremos	dieréis	dieren	Der	deres	der	dermos

Go.

		Infinitive.		Andado.		Andar (regr.) Ir.		Infinitive.	
		Andando.	yendo.	ido.			Indo.	Ido.	
		Indicative Present.				Indicative Present.			
Andar.	Ir.	va	vamos	váis	van	Vou	vais	vai	vamos
		Imperfect.				Imperfect.			
Iba	ibas	iba	íbamos	íbais	íban	Fui	foste	foi	fomos
		Preterite.				Preterite.			
Andúve	anduviste	andúvo	anduvimos	anduvísteis	anduvieron	Fui	foste	foi	fomos
Fuí	fuiste	fué	fuimos	fuísteis	fueron				
		Future.							
Iré	iras	irá	irémos	iréis	iran				
		Conditional.							
Iria	irias	iria	iriamos	iriais	irian				



Go—continued.

SPANISH.					PORTUGUESE.						
Imperative.					Imperative.						
vé	vaya	váyanos	id	vayan	rai	vá	vamos	ide	vão		
Subjunctive Present.					Subjunctive Present.						
Vaya	vayas	vaya	váyais	váyan	Vá	vás	vá	vades	vão		
Imperfect.					Imperfect.						
Anduviera	anduvieras	anduviera	anduviéramos	anduviérais	anduvieran	Fora	foras	fora	foramos	foreis	forão
Fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuerais	fuera	Fosse	fosses	fosse	fossemos	fosséis	fossem
Anduviese	anduvieses	anduviese	anduviésemos	anduviéseis	anduviesen						
Fuese	fueses	fuese	fuésemos	fuéseis	fuesen						
Future.					Future.						
Anduviere	anduvieres	anduviere	anduviéremos	anduviereis	anduvieren	Fôr	fores	fôr	formos	fordes	forem
Fuere	fueres	fuere	fuéremos	fuereis	fueren						

Go out.

Salir.		Infinitive. Saliendo.		Salido.		Sahir.		Infinitive. Sahindo.		Sahido.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Salgo	sales	sale	salimos	salis	salen	Saio *	saes	sac	saímos	sais	sáem
		Future.									
Saldré	saldras	saldrá	saldrémos	saldreis	saldran						
		Conditional.									
Saldria	saldrias	saldria	saldríamos	saldríaís	saldrían						
		Imperative.									
	sal	salga	salgámos	salgd	sálgan						
		Subjunctive Present.						Subjunctive Present.			
Salga	salgas	salga	salgámos	salgais	sálgan	Saia *	saias	saiá	saiamos	saiáis	saião

\* It is also written Sayo, saya, &c.

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.		Hate.		ITALIAN.	
Haïr.		Infinitive. Haïssant.		Haï.			
		Indicative Present.					
Hais	hais	haït	haïssons	haïssez	haïssent		
Haïssais	haïssais	haïssait	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssaient		
		Imperfect.					
Hais	haï	haït	haïmes	haïtes	haïrent		
Haïrai	haïras	haïra	haïrons	haïrez	haïront		
		Future.					
Haïrais	haïrais	haïrait	haïrions	haïriez	haïraient		
		Conditional.					
		Imperative.					
	hais	haïsse	haïssons	haïssez	haïssent		
		Subjunctive Present.					
Haïsse	haïsses	haïsse	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssent		
		Imperfect.					
Haïsse	haïsses	haït	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssent		

Odiare is regular, with the exception that the second person singular of the present indicative takes the double *i*, as, *tu odii*; other verbs ending in *iare* taking only one, as, *tu pigli*.

		Infinitive. Tenant.		Hold.		Infinitive. Tenendo.					
Tenir.		Indicative Present.		Tenu.		Tenere.		Tenuto.			
Tiens	tiens	tient	tenons	tenez	tiennent	Tengo	tieni	Subjunctive Present. tiene	teniamo	tenete	tengono
		Imperfect.									
Tenais	tenais	tenait	tenions	teniez	tenaient						
		Preterite.									
Tins	tins	tint	tinmes	tintes	tinrent	Tenni	tenesti	tenne	tenemmo	teneste	tennero
		Future.									
Tiendrai	tiendras	tiendra	tiendrons	tiendrez	tiendront	Terrò, &c.					
		Conditional.									
Tiendrais	tiendrais	tiendrait	tiendrions	tiendriez	tiendraient	Terrei, &c.					
		Imperative.									
	tiens	tienne	tenons	tenez	tiennent	teneni	tena	tena	teniamo	tenete	tengano
		Subjunctive Present.									
Tienne	tiennes	tienne	tenions	teniez	tiennent	Tenga	tenga	tenga	teniamo	teniate	tengano
		Imperfect.									
Tiusse	tinsses	tint	tinssions	tinssiez	tinssent						



SPANISH.

Hate.

PORTUGUESE.

Odiar and Detestar both regular.  
 Aborrecer follows the general rule of irregularity,  
 viz., verbs ending in *ecer* add a *z* before the *c*, followed  
 by *a* or *o*; as, aborrezco in the present indicative.

Odiar and Aborrecer—Regular.  
 Except that the latter, like all verbs in *cer*, makes the  
*c* soft before *o* and *a*, by the accent, as *ç*.

Hold.

Tener, to hold, is another form of the verb To have,  
 and is conjugated, page 151.

Ter, and Pegar.

Infinitive.  
 Pegando.

Pegado.

peguei

pegaste

Preterite.  
 pegou

pegamos

pegastes

pegarão

Pegue

pegues

Subjunctive Present.  
 pegue peguemos

pegueis

peguem



Know.

		SPANISH.						PORTUGUESE.			
		Infinitive.						Infinitive.			
		Sabiendo.						Sabendo.			
Saber.		Indicative Present.		Sabido.		Saber.		Indicative Present.		Sabido.	
Sé	sabes	sabe	sabemos	sabeis	saben	Sei	sabes	sabe	sabemos	sabeis	sabem
Supé	supiste	supo	Preterite. supíamos	supísteis	supieron	Sube	} soubeste	Preterite. soube	soubemos	soubestes	souberão
Sabré	sabras	sabrá	Future. sabremos	sabreis	sabran	Sube		soubeste	soubemos	soubestes	souberão
Sabria	sabrias	sabria	Conditional. sabríamos	sabríais	sabrían						
	sabe	sepa	Imperative. sepámos	sabed	sépan			Imperative. saiba	saibamos	sabei	saibão
Sepa	sepas	sepa	Subjunctive Present. sepamos	sepais	sepan	Saiba	saibas	Subjunctive Present. saiba	saibamos	saibais	saibão
Supiera	supieras	supiera	Imperfect. supiéramos	supiérais	supieran	Soubera	souberas	Imperfect. soubera	souberamos	souberéis	souberão
Supiese	supieses	supiese	Future. supiésemos	supiéseis	supiesen	Soubesse	soubesses	Future. soubesse	soubessemos	soubesseis	soubessem
Supiere	supieres	supiere	Future. supiéremos	supiéreis	supieren	Souber	souberes	Souber	soubermos	souberdes	souberem

Know.

Conocer—Like Nacer, to be born, and all verbs ending in *cer*, which change the *c* into *z* before *o* and *a*.

Conhecer—Regular.

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.				Laugh.		ITALIAN.			
Rire.		Infinitive.		Ri (no fem.)		Ridere.		Infinitive.		Riso.	
		Riant.						Ridendo.			
		Indicative Present.						Preterite.			
Ris	ris	rit	rions	riez	rient						
Riais	riaia	riaiait	rions	riez	riaient						
Ris	ris	rit	rimes	rîtes	rirent	Risi	ridesti	rise	ridemmo	rideste	risero
Rirai	riras	rira	rions	rirez	riront						
Rirais	rirais	rirait	rions	ririez	riraient						
	ris	rie	rions	riez	rient						
Rie	ries	rie	rions	riez	rient						
Risse	risses	rit	rissions	rissiez	rissent						

		FRENCH.				Live.		ITALIAN.			
Vivre.		Infinitive.		Vécu (no fem.)		Vivere.		Infinitive.		Vivuto, or Vissuto.	
		Vivant.						Vivendo.			
		Indicative Present.						Preterite.			
Vis	vis	vit	vivons	vivez	vivent						
Vivais	vivais	vivait	vivions	viviez	vivaient						
Vécus	vécus	vécût	vécûmes	vécûtes	vécurent	Vissi	vivesti	visse	vivemmo	viveste	vissero
Vivrai	vivras	vivra	vivrons	vivrez	vivront	{ Vivrò,					
Vivrais	vivrais	vivrait	vivrons	vivriez	vivraient	{ Vivrerò, &c.					
	vis	vive	vivons	vivez	vivent	{ Vivrei,					
Vive	vives	vive	vivions	viviez	vivent	{ Viverei, &c.			Conditional.		
Vécusse	vécusses	vécût	vécussions	vécussiez	vécussent						

## VERBS.

		SPANISH.				
		Infinitive.			Laugh.	
		Riendo, or Riyendo.				
		Indicative Present.				
Reir.						
	ries	rie	reimos	reis	rien	
		Preterite.				
Ref	reiste	{ riò riyo }	} reimos	reísteis	{ rieron riyeron }	
		Imperative.				
	rie	ria	riamos	reid	rian	
		Subjunctive Present.				
Ria	rias	ria	riamos	riais	rian	
		Imperfect.				
Riera	rieras	riera	riéramos	rierais	rieran	
Riese	rieses	riese	riésemos	riéseis	riesen	
		Future.				
Riere	rieres	riere	riéremos	riereis	rieren	

## PORTUGUESE.

Rir—Regular.

Live.

Vivir—Regular.

Viver—Regular.

## VERBS.

		FRENCH.					Move.		ITALIAN.			
Mouvoir.		Infinitive.		Mouvant.		Mu.	Muovere, or Movere.		Infinitive.		Mosso.	
		Mouvant.		Mouvant.					Movendo.			
		Indicative Present.		Indicative Present.					Indicative Present.			
Meus	meus	meut	mouvons	mouvez	meuvent	Muovo	muovi	muove	moviamo	movete	muovono	
Mouvais	mouvais	mouvait	mouvions	mouviez	mouvaient	Moveva, &c.		Imperfect.				
Mus	mus	mut	mâmes	mâtes	murent	Mossi	movesti	mosse	movemmo	moveste,	mossero	
Mouvrai	mouvras	mouvra	mouvrons	mouvrez	mouvront	Moverò, &c.		Future.				
Mouvrais	mouvrais	mouvrait	mouvriens	mouvriez	mouvraient	Moverei, &c.		Conditional.				
	meus	meuve	mouvons	mouvez	meuvent		muovi	muova	muoviamo	movete	muovano	
Meuve	meuves	meuve	mouvions	mouviez	meuvent	Muova	muova	muova	moviamo	moviate	muovano	
Musse	musses	mût	mussions	mussiez	mussent	Movessi, &c.!		Imperfect.				

		Open.										
Ouvrir.		Infinitive.		Ouvrir.		Aprire.		Infinitive.		Aperto.		
		Ouvrant.		Ouvrant.				Aprendo.				
		Indicative Present.		Indicative Present.				Indicative Present.				
Ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	ouvrons	ouvrez	ouvrent	Apro, &c.						
Ouvrais	ouvrais	ouvrait	ouvriens	ouvriez	ouvraient							
Ouvris	ouvris	ouvrit	ouvrimés	ouvrites	ouvrirent	{ Aprii } apristi	{ apri } aprimmo	apriste	{ aprirone }	{ apersero }		
Ouvrirai	ouvriras	ouvrira	ouvriens	ouvrirez	ouvriront							
Ouvrirais	ouvrirais	ouvrirait	ouvriens	ouvririez	ouvriraient							
	ouvre	ouvre	ouvrons	ouvrez	ouvrent	apri, &c.		Imperative.				
Ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	ouvriens	ouvriez	ouvrent	Apra, &c.		Subjunctive Present.				
Ouvrisse	ouvrisses	ouvrit	ouvrissons	ouvrissez	ouvrirent							



## VERBS.

		FRENCH.				Please.		ITALIAN.			
Plaire.		Infinitive. Plaisant.		Plu.		Piacere.		Infinitive. Piacendo.		Piaciuto.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Plais	plais	plaît	plaisons	plaisez	plaisent	Piacio	piaci	piace	piacciamo	piacete	piacciono
Plaisais	plaisais	plaisait	plaisions	plaisiez	plaisaient						
Plus	plus	plut	plûmes	plûtes	plurent	Piacqui	piacesti	piacque	piacemmo	piaceste	piacquero
Plairai	plairas	plaira	plairons	plairez	plairont						
Plairais	plairais	plairait	plairions	plairiez	plairaient						
	plais	plaise	plaisons	plaisez	plaisent		piaci	piaccia	piacciamo	piacete	piacciano
Plaise	plaises	plaise	plaisions	plaisiez	plaisent	Piaccia	piaccia	piaccia	piacciamo	piacciate	piacciano
Plusse	plusses	plût	plussions	plussiez	plussent						

		FRENCH.				Put.		ITALIAN.			
Mettre.		Infinitive. Mettant.		Mis.		Mettere. Also, <i>Porre</i> or <i>Ponere</i> .		Infinitive. Ponendo.		Preterite— <i>misi, mise, misero, posto.</i>	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Mets	mets	met	mettons	mettez	mettent	Pongo	poni	pone	poniamo	ponete	pongono
Mettais	mettais	mettait	mettions	mettiez	mettaient	Poneva, &c.					
Mis	mis	mit	mîmes	mîtes	mirent	Posi	ponesti	pose	ponemmo	poneste	posero
Mettrais	mettrais	mettra	mettrons	mettrez	mettront	Porrà, &c.					



Please.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

Agradar—Regular.  
Placer—Verb impersonal.

Agradar and Gostar—Regular.

Put.

Poner.		Infinitive. Poniendo.		Puesto.		Pôr.		Infinitive. Pondo.		Posto.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Pongo	pones	pone	ponemos	poneis	ponen	Ponho	pões	põe	ponos	pondes	põem
						Punha	punhas	punha	Imperfect. punhamos	punheis	punhão
Puse	pusiste	puso	Preterite. pusimos	pusisteis	pusieron	Puz	{pozeste } {puzeste }	pôz	Preterite. {pozemos } {puzemos }	pozestes puzestes	pozerão puzerão
Pondré	pondras	pondrá	Future. pondrémós	pondreis	pondran						

## VERBS.

## Put—continued.

		FRENCH.				ITALIAN.					
		Conditional.				Conditional.					
Mettrais	mettrais	mettrait	mettrions	mettriez	mettraient	Porrei, &c.					
	mets	mette	mettons	mettez	mettent		poni	ponga	poniamo	ponete	pongano
Mette	mettes	mette	mettions	mettiez	mettent	Ponga	ponga	ponga	poniamo	poniate	pongano
Misse	misses	mit	missions	missiez	missent						

## Read.

Lire.		Infinitive. Lisant.		Lu.		Leggere.			Infinitive. Leggendo.		Letto.	
		Indicative Present.										
Lis	lis	lit	lisons	lisez	lisent							
Lisais	lisais	lisait	lisions	lisiez	lisaient							
Lus	lus	lut	lûmes	lûtes	lurent	Lessi	leggesti	lesse	Preterite. leggemmo	leggeste	lessero	
Lirai	liras	lira	lirons	lirez	liront							
Lirais	lirais	lirait	lirions	liriez	liraient							
	lis	lise	lisons	lisez	lisent							
Lise	lises	lise	lisions	lisiez	lisent							
Lusse	lusses	lût	lussions	lussiez	lussent							

Put—continued.

SPANISH.						PORTUGUESE.					
Conditional.						Imperative.					
Pondria	pondrias	pondria	pondríamos	pondrísais	pondrian						
	pon	ponga	pongámos	poned	pongan	põe	ponha	ponhamos	ponde	ponhão	
Ponga	pongas	ponga	pongamos	pongais	pongan	Ponha	ponha	ponhamos	ponhais	ponhão	
			Imperfect.					Imperfect.			
Pusiera	pusieras	pusiera	pusiéramos	pusiérais	pusieran	Pozera	} pozeras	pozera	pozeramos	pozeréis	pozerão
Pusiese	pusieses	pusiese	pusiésemos	pusiéseis	pusiesen	Puzera		} pozesses	pozesse	pozessemos	pozesseis
			Future.			Puzesse					
Pusiere	pusieres	pusiere	pusiéremos	pusiéreis	pusieren	Puzer	} puzeres	puzer	puzermos	puzerdes	puzerem
						Poser					

Read.

Leer.		Infinitive. Leyendo.		Leido.		Ler.		Infinitive. Lendo.		Lido.		
						Leio	} lê	lê	lemos	{leis	} lêm	
						Leyo				{ledes		
Lef	leiste	leyó	Preterite. leímos	leísteis	leyeron							
								lê	leia	leamos	lede	leão
									Subjunctive Present.			
						Leia	} leias	leia	leiamos	leiais	leião	
Leyera	leyeras	leyera	Imperfect. leyéramos	leyérais	leyeran	Lea						
Leyese	leyeses	leyese	leyésemos	leyéseis	leyesen							
			Future									
Leyere	leyeres	leyere	leyeremos	leyereis	leyeren							

## VERBS.

		Run.									
Courir.		FRENCH. [Infinitive.] Courant.		Couru.		Correre.		ITALIAN. [Infinitive.] Correndo.		Corso.	
		Indicative Present.									
Cours	cours	court	courons	courez	courent						
		Imperfect.									
Courais	courais	courait	courions	couriez	couraient						
		Preterite.						Preterite.			
Courus	courus	courut	courûmes	courûtes	coururent	Corsi	corresti	corse	corremmo	correste	corsero
		Future.									
Courrai	courras	courra	courrons	courrez	courront						
		Conditional.									
Courrais	courrais	courrait	courrions	courriez	courraient						
		Imperative.									
	cours	coure	courons	courez	courent						
		Subjunctive Present.									
Coure	coures	coure	courions	couriez	courent						
		Imperfect.									
Courusse	courusses	courût	courussions	courussiez	courussent						

		Say.									
Dire.		Infinitive. Disant.		Dit."		Dire.		Infinitive. Dicendo.		Detto.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Dis	dis	dit	disons	dites	[disent	Dico	dici, or di'	dice	diciamo	dite	dicono
		Imperfect.						Imperfect.			
Disais	disais	disait	disions	disiez	disaient	Diceva, &c.					
		Preterite.						Preterite.			
Dis	dis	dit	dimes	dîtes	dirent	Dissi	dicesti	disse	dicemmo	diceste	dissero
		Future.						Future.			
Dirai	diras	dira	dirons	direz	diront	Dirò, &c.					
		Conditional.						Conditional.			
Dirais	dirais	dirait	dirions	diriez	diraient	Dirai, &c.					

SPANISH.

Run.

PORTUGUESE.

Correr—Regular.

Correr—Regular.

Say.

Decir.		Infinitive. Diciendo.		Dicho.		Dizer.		Infinitive. Dizendo.		Dito, or Ditto.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Digo	dices	dice	decimos	decis	dícen	Digo	dizes	diz	dizemos	dizeis	dizem
Dije	dijiste	dijo	Preterite. dijimos	dijisteis	dijeron	Disse	disseste	disse	Preterite. dissemos	dissestes	disserão
Diré	diras	dirá	Future. diremos	direis	dirán	Direi	dirás	dirá	Future. diremos	direis	dirão
Diria	dirias	diria	Conditional. diríamos	diriais	dirían	Diria	dirias	diria	Conditional. diríamos	dirieis	dirião

## VERBS.

Say—*continued.*

		FRENCH.				ITALIAN.					
		Imperative.				Imperative.					
	dis	dise	disons	dites	disent	di'	dica	diciamo	dite	dicano	
Dise	dises	Subjunctive Present.		disiez	disent	Dica	dica	Subjunctive Present.		dicano	
		dise	disions					dica	diciamo	diciate	
		Imperfect.						Imperfect.			
Disse	disses	dît	dissions	dissiez	dissent	Dicessi, &c.					

		See.									
Voir.		Infinitive. Voyant.		Vu.	Vedere.		Infinitive. Vedendo.		Veduto, or Visto.		
		Indicative Present.			Vedo } Veggio }		Indt y e Present.				
Vois	vois	voit	voyons	voyez	voient		vede	vediamo	vedete	vedono	
Voyais	voyais	voyait	voyions	voyiez	voyaient						
Vis	vis	vit	vîmes	vîtes	virent	Vidi	vedesti	vide	Preterite. vedemmo	vedeste	videro
Verrai	verras	verra	verrons	verrez	verront	Vedrò, &c.			Future.		
Verrais	verrais	verrait	verrions	verriez	verraient	Vedrei, &c.			Conditional.		
	vois	voie	voyons	voyez	voient		vedi	veda	Imperative. vediamo	vedete	vedano
Voie	voies	voie	voyions	voyiez	voient	Veda	veda	veda	Subjunctive Present. vediamo	vediate	vedano
Visse	visses	vît	vissions	vissiez	vissent						

Say—continued.

SPANISH.					PORTUGUESE.					
Imperative.					Imperative.					
di	diga	digamos	decid	dígan	dize	diga	digamos	dizei	digão	
Subjunctive Present.					Subjunctive Present.					
Diga	dígas	diga	digais	dígan	Diga	digas	diga	digais	digão	
Imperfect.					Imperfect.					
Dijera	dijeras	dijera	dijerais	dijeran	Dissera	disseras	dissera	disseramos	dissereis	disserão
Dijese	dijeses	dijese	dijésemos	dijésemos	Disseste	dissestes	disseste	disseste	dissesteis	dissestem
Future.					Future.					
Dijere	dijeres	dijere	dijeréis	dijeren	Disser	disseres	disser	dissermos	disserdes	disserem

See.

Ver.		Infinitive. Viendo.		Visto.		Ver.		Infinitive. Vendo.		Visto.	
Veo	ves	ve	vemos	veis	ven	Vejo	vês	vê	vemos	{ veis vedes }	} vêm
Veia	veias	veia	veíamos	veíais	veían	Vi	viste	vio	Preterite, vimos	vistes	virão
	ye	vea	Imperative. veámos	ved	veán		vê	veja	Imperative. vejamos	vêde	vejão
Veá	véas	vca	Subjunctive Present. veámos	veáis	veán	Veja	vejas	veja	Subjunctive Present. vejamos	vejais	vejão
						Vira	viras	vira	Imperfect. viramos	vireis	virão
						Visse	visses	visse	vissemos	visseis	vissem
						Vir	vires	vir	Future. viramos	virdeis	virem





Sleep.

Dormir.		SPANISH. Infinitive. Durmiendo.		Dormido.		Dormir.		PORTUGUESE. Infinitive. Dormindo.		Dormido.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Duermo	duermes	duerme	dormimos	dormis	duermen	Durmo	dormes	dorme	dormimos	dormis	dormem
Dormí	dormiste	durmió	dormimos	dormisteis	durmieron						
	duerme	duerma	durmámos	dormid	duérman						
Duerma	duermas	duerma	durmamos	durmais	duerman	Durma	durmas	durma	durmamos	durmais	durmão
			Imperfect.								
Durmiera	durmieras	durmiera	durmieramos	durmierais	durmieran						
Durmiese	durmiese	durmiese	durmiesemos	durmieseis	durmiesen						
			Future.								
Durmiera	durmieras	durmiera	durmieremos	durmieries	durmieren						

Sit.

Sentar.		Infinitive. Sentando.		Sentado.	
		Indicative Present.			
Siento	sientas	sienta	sentamos	sentais	sientan

Assentar—Regular.

## Sit—continued.

		FRENCH.						ITALIAN.			
		Conditional.						Conditional			
Assiérais	assiérais	assiérait	assiériens	assiériez	assiéraient	Sedrei	} &c.				
						Sederei					
	assieds	Imperative.						Imperative.			
		asséye	asséyons	asséyez	asséyent		siedi	{ sieda	{ sediamo	sedete	{ sedano
								{ segga			{ seggano
		Subjunctive Present.						Subjunctive present.			
Asséye	asséyes	asséye	asséyions	asséyiez	asséyent	Sieda	} sieda	sieda	sediamo	sediate	{ siedano
						Segga					{ seggano
		Imperfect.									
Assisse	assisses	assit	assissions	assissiez	assissent						

## Take.

Prendre.		Infinitive. Prenant.		Pris.	Prendere.		Infinitive. Prendendo.		Preso.
		Indicative Present.							
Prends	prends	prend	prenous	prenez	prennent				
		Imperfect.							
Prenais	prenais	prenait	prenions	prenez	prenaient				
		Preterite.							
Pris	pris	prit	primes	prites	prirent	Presi	prendesti	prese	Preterite. prendemmo prendeste presero
		Future.							
Pendrai	prendras	prendra	prendrons	prendrez	prendront				
		Conditional.							
Pendrais	prendrais	prendrait	prendrions	prendriez	prendraient				
		Imperative.							
	prends	prenne	prenons	prenez	prennent				
		Subjunctive Present.							
Prenne	prennes	prenne	prenions	prenez	prennent				
		Imperfect.							
Prisse	prisses	prit	prissions	prissiez	prissent				

## VERBS.

Sit—*continued.*

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

	sienta	siente	Imperative. sentemos	sentad	sienten
Siente	sientes	siente	Subjunctive Present. sentemos	senteis	sienten

Assentar—Regular.

Take.

Prender and Tomar—Both Regular.

Prender and Tomar—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Wish, or be Willing.

Vouloir.		FRENCH. Infinitive. Voulant.		Voulu.		Volere.		ITALIAN. Infinitive. Volendo.		Voluto.	
Veux	veux	veut	voulons	voulez	veulent	Voglio	vuoi	vuole	vogliamo	volete	vogliono
Voulais	voulais	voulait	voulions	vouliez	voulaient						
Voulus	voulus	voulut	voulûmes	voulûtes	voulurent	Volli	volesti	volle	volemmo	voleste	vollero
Voudrai	voudras	voudra	voudrons	voudrez	voudront	Vorrò, &c.					
Voudrais	voudrais	voudrait	voudrions	voudriez	voudraient	Vorrei, &c.					
				veuillez							
Veuille	veuille	veuille	voulions	vouliez	veussent	Voglia	voglia	voglia	vogliamo	vogliate	vogliano
Voulusse	voulusses	voulût	voulussions	voulussiez	voulussent						

## Worth.

Valoir.		Infinitive. Valant.		Valu.		Valere.		Infinitive. Valendo.		Valuto and Valso.	
Vaux	vaux	vaut	valons	valez	valent	Valgo } Vaglio }	vali	vale	valiamo	valete	{ valgono { vagliono
Valais	valais	valait	valions	valiez	valaient						
Valus	valus	valut	valûmes	valûtes	valurent	Valsi	valesti	valse	valemmo	valeste	valsero
Vaudrai	vaudras	vaudra	vaudrons	vaudrez	vaudront	Varrò, &c.					

Wish, or be Willing.

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.					
Querer.		Infinitive. Queriendo.		Querido.		Querer.		Infinitive. Querendo.		Querido.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Quiero	quieres	quiere	queremos	quereis	quieren	Quero	queres	quer	queremos	quereis	querem
Quise	quisiste	quiso	quisimos	quisisteis	quisieron	Quiz	quizeste	quiz	quizeimos	quizestes	quizerão
Querré	querras	querrá	querrómos	querreis	querran						
Querria	querrias	querria	querríamos	querríais	querrian						
	quíere	quíera	querámos	quered	quíeran		queiras	queira	queiramos	queirais	queirão
Quiera	quieras	quiera	queramos	quérais	quíeran	Queira	queiras	queira	queiramos	queirais	queirão
Quisiera	quisieras	quisiera	quisiéramos	quisiérais	quisieran	Quizera	quizeras	quizera	quizeramos	quizeréis	quizerão
Quisiese	quisieses	quisiese	quisiésemos	quisiérais	quisiesen	Quizesse	quizesses	quizesse	quizessemos	quizesseis	quizessem
Quisiere	quisieres	quisiere	quisiéremos	quisiéreis	quisieren	Quizer	quizeres	quizer	quizermos	quizerdes	quizerem

Worth.

Valer.		Infinitive. Valiendo.		Valido.		Valer.		Infinitive. Valendo.		Valido.	
		Indicative Present.						Indicative Present.			
Valgo	vales	vale	valémos	valeis	valen	Valho	vales	vale, or val	valemos	valeis	valem
Valdré	valdras	valdrá	valdrémos	valdréis	valdran						

Worth—*continued.*

		FRENCH.						ITALIAN.			
		Conditional.						Conditional.			
Vaudrais	vaudrais	vaudrait	vaudrions	vaudriez	vaudraient	Varrei, &c.					
	vaux	vaille	valons	valez	vaillent		vali	valga	valiamo	valete	valgano
		Imperative.						Imperative.			
Vaille	vailles	vaille	valions	valiez	vaillent	Valga	valga	valga	valiamo	valiate	valgano
		Subjunctive Present.						Subjunctive Present.			
Valusse	valusses	valût	valussions	valussiez	valussent						
		Imperfect.									

## Write.

Écrire.		Infinitive.		Écrit.		Scrivere.		Infinitive.		Scritto.	
		Écrivant.						Scrivendo.			
Écris	écris	écrit	écrivons	écrivez	écrivent						
		Indicative Present.									
Écrivais	écrivais	écrivait	écrivions	écriviez	écrivaient						
		Imperfect.									
Écris	écrit	écrit	écrivîmes	écrivîtes	écrivirent	Scrissi	scrivesti	scrisse	scrivemmo	scriveste	scrissero
		Preterite.									
Écrirai	écriras	écrira	écrivons	écriviez	écriront						
		Future.									
Écrirais	écrivais	écrivait	écrivions	écriviez	écriraient						
		Conditional.									
	écrit	écrite	écrivons	écriviez	écrivent						
		Imperative.									
Écrive	écrivies	écrive	écrivions	écriviez	écrivent						
		Subjunctive Present.									
Écrivisse	écrivisse	écrivît	écrivissions	écrivissiez	écrivissent						
		Imperfect.									

Worth—*continued.*

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE					
		Conditional.									
Valdria,	valdrías	valdria	valdríamos	valdríais	valdrían						
		Imperative.									
	vale	valga	valgámos	valed	válgan	vale	valha	valhamos	valei	valhão	
		Subjunctive Present.									
Valga	valgas	valga	valgámos	valgáis	válgan	Valha	valhas	valha	valhamos	valhais	valhão

Write.

Escribir.—The only irregularity of this verb is in the past participle—*escrito*.

Same of Escrever, which makes *escrito* (written.)

## FRENCH.

There are also other Irregular Verbs which we have not thought necessary to conjugate amongst those in most common use ; such as, } Same.

*Envoyer*, which in the singular number of the present indicative, the imperative, and present subjunctive make *j'envoie*, &c. ; in the future and conditional, *j'enverrai*, &c., *j'enverrais*, &c. *Renvoyer* in same manner ; these and the verb *aller* (conjugated) are the only irregular verbs of the first conjugation.

*Boullir* in the present indicative singular, *je bous*, &c. imp., *bous*.

*Offrir*, *offrant*, *offert*. Indicative present, *j'offre*, &c. ; imp., *j'offrais*, &c. ; pret., *j'offris*, &c. ; imp. and sub. pres., *offre*.

*Battre*, *battant*, *battu*—

*Je bats*, &c., *je battais*, *je battis*, *je battrai*, *que je batte*, *que je battisse*, &c.

*Coudre*, *cousant*, *cousu*—

*Je couds*, &c., *cousais*, *cousis*, *coudrai*, *que je couse*, *que je cousisse*.

*Feindre*, *feignant*, *feint*—

*Je feins*, &c., *feignais*, *feignis*, *feindrai*, *que je feigne*, *que je feignisse*.

## ITALIAN.

*Stare*—To stand ; to be ; to reside, &c.

Indic. Present—*Sto*, *stai*, *sta*, *stiamo*, *state*, *stanno*.

Pret.—*Stetti*, *stesti*, *stette*, *stemmo*, *steste*, *stettero*.

Fut. and Cond.—*Starò*, *starei*, &c. Imp.—*Sta*,

*stia*, *stiamo*, *state*, *stiano* or *stieno*. Sub. Pres.—

*Stia*, *stia*, *stia*, *stiamo*, *stiate*, *stiano* or *stieno*. Im-

perf.—*Stessi*, *stessi*, *stesse*, *stessimo*, *steste*, *stessero*.

The other irregular verbs of the first conjugation are already conjugated ; viz., *andare*, *dare*, and *fare*. There are also some derivatives which are irregular, and several which are regular in their inflexions ; such as,

*Riandare*, { to go again, *irregular*.  
                  { to examine, *regular*.

*Sovrastare*, { to tarry, *irregular*.  
                  { to menace, *regular*.

*Cuocere*, *cocendo*, *cotto*—

*Cuoco*, *cuoci*, *cuoce*, *cociamo*, *cocete*, *cuocono* ; *coceva*,

&c., *coffi*, *cocesti*, *cosse*, *cocemmo*, *coceste*, *cossero* ;

*cocerò*, *cocerei*, &c., *cuoci*, *cuoca*, *cociamo*, *cocete*,

*cuocano* ; *cuoca*, *cuoca*, *cuoca*, *cociamo*, *cociate*,

*cuocano* ; *cocessi*, &c.



SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Caber*—

		Indicative Present.			
Quepo	cabes	cabe	cabemos	cabeis	caben
			Preterite.		
Cupe	cupiste	cupo	cupimos	cupisteis	cupieron
			Future.		
Cabré	cabras	cabrá	cabremos	cabreis	cabran
			Conditional.		
Cabría	cabrias	cabría	cabriamos	cabriais	cabrian
			Imperative.		
		cabe	quepa	cabed	quepan
			quepamos		
			Subjunctive Present.		
Quepa	quepas	quepa	quepamos	quepais	quepan
			Imperfect.		
Cupiera	cupieras	cupiera	cupieramos	cupierais	cupieran
Cupiese	cupieses	cupiese	cupiesemos	cupieseis	cupiesen
			Future.		
Cupiere	cupieres	cupiere	cupieremos	cupiereis	cupieren

*Traer*, trayendo, traído.

Traigo, traes, &c. ; traje, trajiste, trajo, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron ; traiga, &c. (imp. and sub.) trajera, &c. ; trajese, &c. ; trajere, &c.

*Oír*, oyendo, oído.

Oigo, oyes, oye, oídes, oís, oyen. Preterite—Oyó, oyeron. Imperative—Oye, oiga, oigamos, oid, oigan. Subjunctive Present—Oiga, &c. ; oyera, &c. ; oyese, &c. ; oyere, &c.

*Crer*, like ler—to read.

*Trazer*—

Trago, trazes, traz, &c. ; trouxe (or truxe), trouxeste, trouxe, trouxemos, trouxestes, trouxerão. Trarei, trarás, trará, traremos, trareis, trarão. Traria, &c. Imp.—Traz, traga, tragamos, trazei, tragão. Traga, &c. ; trouxera, &c. ; trouxesse, &c. ; trouxer, &c.

*Perder*—

Perco	perdes	perde	perdemos	perdeis	perdem
			Imperative.		
		perde	perca	perdei	percão
			percamos		
			Subjunctive Present.		
Perca	percas	perca	percamos	percais	percão

*Pedir*—

Peço	pedes	pede	pedimos	pedis	pedem
			Imperative.		
		pede	peça	pedi	peção
			peçamos		
			Subjunctive.		
Peça	peças	peça	peçamos	peçais	peção

*Vestir*—

Visto	vestes	veste	vestimos	vestis	vestem
			Imperative.		
		veste	vista	vesti	vistão
			vistamos		
			Subjunctive.		
Vista	vistas	vista	vistamos	vistais	vistão

## FRENCH.

*Croire*, croyant, cru—

Je crois, &c., croyais, crus, croirai, que je croie, que je crusse.

*Moudre*, moulant, moulu—

Je mouds, &c., moulais, moulus, moudrai, que je moule, que je moulusse.

*Suivre*, suivant, suivi—

Je suis, &c., suivais, suivis, suivrai, que je suive, que je suivisse, &c.

*Vaincre*, vainquant, vaincu—

Je vains, &c., vainquais, vainquis, vaincrai, que je vainque, que je vainquisse, &c.

*Traire*, trayant, trait—

Je trais, &c., trayais (no pret.), trairai, que je traie, &c. (no imperfect subjunctive.)

Note *a*.—The preterite of irregular verbs, second and third conjugations, is formed as follows :—

First person singular always ends in *i*, which changes into *e* to form the third person singular, and this adds *ro* to form the third person plural ; the others are regular.

*Examples*.—*Correre*—To run.

## ITALIAN.

*Rimanere*, rimasto or rimasto—

Rimango, rimani, &c. Pret.—Rimasi, (*a.*) ; rimarrò ; *rimarrei*. Imp.—Rimani, rimanga, &c. ; rimanga, &c.

*Trarre* or *traere*, traendo, tratto—

Traggo, trai or traggi, trae or tragge, traiamo or traggiamo, traete, traggono or tranno ; trassi ; trarrò, trarrei ; trai, tragga, &c. ; traessi, &c.

*Udire*—

Odo	odi	ode	Present Indicative. udiamo	udite	odono
	odi	oda	Imperative. udiamo	udite	odano
Oda	oda	oda	Subjunctive Present. udiamo	udiate	odano

*N.B.*—Most derivatives are conjugated in the same manner as the preceding forms of irregular verbs.

	Singular.			Plural.	
1st, <i>Corsi</i> .	2nd, <i>Corresti</i> .	3rd, <i>Corse</i> .	1st, <i>Corremmo</i> .	2nd, <i>Correste</i> .	3rd, <i>Corsero</i> .

SPANISH.

*Jugar*—

Juego, juegas, juega, jugamos, jugais, juegan, jugué, jugaste, &c. ; juega, juegue, juguemos, jugad, jueguen ; juegue, &c. (subj. pres.)

*Pedir*, pidiendo, pedido.

Pido, pides, pide, pedimos, pedis, piden. Preterite—Pidió, pidieron. Imperative—Pide, pida, pidamos, pedid, pidan. Subjunctive Present—Pida, &c. ; pidiera, &c. ; pidiese, &c. ; pidiere, &c.

The general irregularities of Spanish verbs are as follows :—

In *eer* and *uir* change the *i* of the termination into *y* before *e* or *o* (in *uir* the change is also made before *a*.)

In *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, *ucir*, add *z* before the radical *c* where the terminations begin with *o* or *a* ; as,

*Leer*, leyendo, &c.

*Instruir*, instruyo, &c.

*Conocer*, conozco, &c.

Verbs ending in *uir* and *ñir* drop the *i* in the terminations when followed by *e* or *o* ; as *ceñir*, *ciño*, &c.

*N.B.*—Most derivatives are conjugated in the same manner as the preceding forms of irregular verbs. } Same.

PORTUGUESE.

*Subir*—

Subo	sobes	sobe	subimos	subis	sobem
	sobe	suba	Imperative. subamos	sobi	subão

*Caber*—

Caibo	cabes	cabe	cabemos	cabes	cabem
Coube	coubeste	coube	coubemos	coubestes	couberão
	cabe	caiba	caibamos	cabei	caibão
Caiba, &c.		coubesse, &c.		couber, &c.	

*Ouuir*—

Ouço, ouves, &c. Sub.—Ouça, ouças, &c.

There are several verbs in *uuir* which are regular, with the exception that in the third person sing., present ind., the *e* is suppressed ; as, *Produzir*, produz.

## MOODS AND TENSES.

## Indicative Present.

141. This tense is easily understood on reference to the models of verbs already given. It may, however, be remarked, that in all these languages, as in English, the *present* tense is sometimes employed for the *past* and for the *future*, in order to throw some animation or emphasis into the expression. It frequently serves for the

## Imperfect and Preterite Definite.

142. The right employment of these tenses in other languages is seldom sufficiently studied by the English. This arises partly from the fact that in their language the same inflection of the verb is frequently used for both the tenses.

When the verb expresses an action in a state of *continuance* or habit, the *imperfect* must be employed ; when a period is distinctly defined, and it is clearly understood that the action has passed away, use the *preterite definite*, or, as many call it, the *past perfect*. Such are the general rules ; but we think them insufficient without some very clear examples to illustrate them, and a few observations which are applicable to *all* the languages under our notice.

In the column devoted to French, among the examples which come hereafter, we read : Il *retrouva*, à son retour, les mêmes désordres : les Espagnols *abusaient* de la superstition des naturels, et de la terreur que leur *inspiraient* les chevaux—"On his return, he *found* the same disorders." Here the period is clearly defined : he did not *continue* finding, but actually, *positively*, on his return, *found* the same disorders. The Spaniards *abused* (or took advantage of) the superstition of the natives, and the terror with which the horses *inspired* them. Note the distinction : the Spaniards *abused* (*abusaient*) : they are described as *continuing* to abuse, being in the *habit*

## MOODS AND TENSES.

## Indicative Present.

*past* tense when describing some particular event, a battle for example :—The troops *advance*, they *fire* upon the enemy, &c. When employed for the *future*, it usually refers to a time close at hand : as, Demain il *est* mort—to-morrow he *dies*. Io *vengo* subito—I will come soon.

## Imperfect and Preterite Definite.

of *abusing*. The word *inspiraient* denotes also that the action is *continuative*. The verb *retrouva* (found) is, therefore, placed in the *preterite definite*, and the others in the *imperfect* tense.

One of the Italian examples will also materially assist our explanation : Essa *parlava* ancora quando Gertrude già *dormiva*. Il sonno non fu rotto che dalla voce della vecchia che *venne* a vederla—She *spoke*, that is, *continued* speaking, while Gertrude *slept*, or *continued* sleeping. The sleep was broken only by the voice of the old woman who *came* to see her. The verb *came* does not imply any *habitual* action. Had it been meant to say that the old woman *came daily*, was in the *habit* of coming, then the verb would have been placed by the Italian in the *imperfect tense* : as, *Veniva* ogni giorno (she came every day.)

It also follows from these observations that when describing any customs or habits, any professions or occupations of individuals in a former period, the *imperfect* tense should be employed.

A careful study of the examples which now follow will further serve to elucidate our meaning, and to remove a difficulty which often troubles the student of a foreign language, and which invariably leads into error those who endeavour to speak without having first acquired some grammatical guidance.

## FRENCH.

*Examples*

Ce fut là qu'il *apprit* le drame terrible dont on *l'accusait*.  
It was there that he learnt the terrible drama of which they accused him.

Cette tante se *faisait* appeler Madame D. ; et elle *était* veuve.

This aunt called herself Madame D. ; and she was a widow.

Il *retrouva*, à son retour, les mêmes désordres. Les Espagnols *abusaient* de la superstition des naturels, et de la terreur que leur *inspiraient* les chevaux.

He found, on his return, the same disorders. The Spaniards took advantage of the superstition of the natives, and of the terror with which the horses inspired them.

Il *construit* des forts, *traça* des routes, *chercha* l'or, moins abondant qu'il ne *l'attendait* dans ces régions.

He constructed forts, traced roads, and sought gold, which was less abundant than he expected in those regions.

143. After the conjunction *si* (if), the imperfect tense of the indicative mood is nearly always adopted by the French.

*Example.*

*Si j'en étais sûr, je le dirais.*

If I were sure of it, I would say so.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli *era* uomo di molta autorità presso ai suoi.  
He was a man of much authority among his people.

La donna che *venne* ad accompagnarla nella sua stanza *era* una vecchia di casa.

The woman who came to accompany her into her room was an old servant of the house.

Essa *parlava* ancora quando Gertrude già *dormiva*.  
Il sonno non *fu* rotto che dalla voce della vecchia che *venne* a vederla.

She was speaking while Gertrude slept. The sleep was broken only by the voice of the old woman who came to see her.

“Addio !” *disse* tristamente Luisa ad Alfonso, che non *sapeva* risolversi d'andarsene.

“Adieu !” sadly said Louisa to Alphonso, who did not know how to resolve upon going away.

*Se* (if), in Italian, unlike the French, requires the verb which follows to be placed in the *subjunctive mood*.

*Example.*

*Se io ne fossi certo, lo direi.*

If I were sure of it, I would say so.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Mientras el anacoreta *estaba* hablando.  
 While the anchorite was speaking.  
 Entonces el caballero *habló* de esta manera.  
 Then the gentleman spoke in this manner.  
 Todo aquello que *servía* de alimento á nuestros primeros  
 padres.  
 All that which served as food for our forefathers.  
*Notó*le el viejo y le *dijo*.  
 The old man noticed it, and said to him.  
*Era* la guardia real que *hacía* el servicio militar en el  
 palacio.  
 It was the royal guard which performed the military  
 service in the palace.  
*Nací* en Madrid, y mi origen *fué* el que voy á referir.  
 I was born in Madrid, and my origin was that which  
 I am going to relate.  
*Llamábase* Juan, y solo *pensaba* en darse.  
 He was called John, and only thought of giving himself.

} Same of *si* (if.)

*Example.*

Lo haria *si* *tuviera* tiempo.  
 I would do it if I had time.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Este tratado *estipulava* a troca de ractificações.  
 This treaty stipulated the exchange of ratifications.  
*Era* conforme com as instruccões que *recebestes*.  
 It was in accordance with the instructions which you  
 received.  
 Chega o "Londres" que já se *demorava* e que *soffreu*  
 um forte temporal.  
 The "London," which was delayed, and which suffered  
 a violent storm, is arriving.  
*Recebi e summetti* á rainha os vossos despachos.  
 I received and submitted to the Queen your despatches.  
 Desde que *deixou* a administração, o Dr S. *retirou-se*  
 para uma chacara dos arrabaldes.  
 Soon as he left the administration Dr S. retired to a  
 farm in the suburbs.  
 Tal soberano, no dia em que seu reinado *começou*, *morreo*  
 para si e *nasceu* para os outros.  
 Which sovereign, on the day when his reign com-  
 menced, died for himself and was born for others.

} Same of *se* (if.)

*Example.*

O faria *se* *tivera* tempo.  
 I would do it if I had time.

## Preterite Indefinite, or Compound of the Present.

## FRENCH.

144. This tense is employed when in relation to a period which still continues: as, This day; this week; this month; this year. } Same.

*Example.*

Je vous *ai vu* trois fois *cette semaine*.  
I have seen you three times this week.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

*Quest'oggi* vi ho visto tre volte.  
I have seen you three times to-day.

## Future Tense

Besides the usual employment of this tense, as seen in the models of verbs, the following peculiarities must be noted:— } Same.

145. It is frequently used when any doubt is expressed; for instance, by the word "perhaps." } Same.

*Example.*

Déjà *peut-être* sera-t-il venu.  
He is perhaps already come.

*Example.*

Egli *forse* sarà già venuto.  
He is perhaps already come.



## Preterite Indefinite, or Compound of the Present.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

The preterite indefinite (or compound of the present) is not of frequent use by the Portuguese, who generally in its place employ the preterite definite.

*Example.*

Le *he visto hoy tres veces.*  
I have seen him three times to-day.

*Examples.*

Hoje *vm. levantou-se* de madrugada.  
To-day, you rose early.  
*Almocei* muito bem.  
I have breakfasted well.

## Future Tense.

} Same.

In Portuguese, the future is not used as in French and the other languages in the place of the present indicative or subjunctive. There is, however, a form of the future which is in constant employment, namely, the present indicative of *haver*; *hei, has, ha, hemos, heis, hão*, (Note *a*.) (the first and second persons plural are contracted,) and the infinitive of another verb. When a pronoun is used it is placed between the two verbs.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Vendrá quizá* para hablarme.  
He is come perhaps to speak to me.

Note *a*.—The simple future of all Portuguese verbs is formed by the addition of *hei, has, &c.*, to the infinitive, the letter *h* being suppressed; as, *amar-hei* becomes *amarei*—I will love. Sometimes in irregular verbs the form of the infinitive is contracted; as, *fazer-hei*, which makes in the future *farei, fazer-has, faras, &c.*

## FRENCH.

146. Interrogative sentences are sometimes in form of the *future*, when in English they are expressed by "may," "can," &c. } Same.

*Example.*

*Pourrai-je* vous dire quelque chose ?  
May I say something to you ?

147. After the conjunction *si* (if) a verb is frequently placed in the *present* tense, while another verb in the same sentence takes the *future*. } In such an instance an Italian would place *both* the verbs in the *future* tense.

*Example.*

Je *viendrai si je puis*.  
I will come if I can.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

*Potrò* dirvi qualche cosa ?  
May I say something to you ?

148. In English the word "will" is very often considered as the future form of another verb, while in reality it is in itself a distinct verb denoting a voluntary act. } Same.

The French equivalent in such a case is expressed by *vouloir*, to be willing, to wish. } *Volere*, to be willing, to wish.

*Examples.*

*Voulez-vous* me donner ce livre là ?  
Will you give me that book ?  
Je vous le *donnerai* demain.  
I will give it you to-morrow.

*Examples.*

*Volete* darmi quel libro ?  
Will you give me that book ?  
Domani velo *darò*.  
I will give it you to-morrow.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Example.*

¿ *Habr*á cosa mas desgraciada ?  
Can there be a more unfortunate thing ?

*Example.*

O senhor, *far-me-ha* o favor ?  
Sir, will you do me the favour ?

} Same as French.

} The Portuguese would use the Subjunctive future.

*Example.*

Iré á su casa, *si hace* bueno.  
I will go to your house, if the weather is fine.

*Example.*

Fâ-lo-hei *se puder*.  
I will do it if I can.

} Same.

} Same.

} *Querer*, to be willing, to wish.

} *Querer*, to be willing, to wish.

*Examples.*

¿ *Quiere*, Vm. darme ese libro ?  
Will you give me that book ?  
Se lo *daré* mañana.  
I will give it you to-morrow.

*Examples.*

*Quer.* V. tomar limonada ?  
Will you take some lemonade ?  
Não, *tomarei* chá.  
No, I will take some tea.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—The last example is for the purpose of showing the difference between the *future* form of the verb *to give* and the two verbs *to be willing to give*, expressed in the first example. } Same.

## ITALIAN.

## Conditional Mood.

149. This mood has two tenses, present and past (or compound of the present.) } Same.  
It may be used interrogatively, as follows :—

*Example.*

*Pourrais-je vous demander votre nom ?*  
Might I ask your name ?

*Example.*

*Potrei domandarvi il vostro nome ?*  
Might I ask your name ?

## Imperative Mood.

150. The only rule requiring special note is, that when the second person singular terminates in *e*, as in the first conjugation, and is followed by the pronoun *en*, or *y*, an *s* is added for the sake of euphony, except when *en* or *y* relates to another verb immediately following.

*Example.*

Parles-*en*.  
Speak thou of it.

It is peculiar to Italian, and may be here noticed as the only necessary rule, that when the second person singular is accompanied by a negative the *infinitive* is used instead of the *imperative* mood.

*Examples.*

Non parlare      do not thou speak.  
Non pensare      do not thou think.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

**Conditional Mood.**

In the grammar of the Royal Academy of Madrid, this mood is made to form a part of the *subjunctive*: the same plan is adopted by many Spanish grammarians. The termination *ria*, nevertheless, always shows the verb *to be* in a *conditional* mood: we, therefore, depart from the usual custom, and include in the conjugations of all verbs the *conditional mood*, which corresponds with the same in other languages.

The Portuguese conditional, like that in Spanish, terminates in *ria*; it is also frequently expressed by the imperfect subjunctive in *ra*; as *Quizera ver um chapéo a moda*, I should like to see a fashionable hat.

**Imperative Mood.**

When in English the imperative is used in a *negative* phrase, the Spanish employ the present tense of the *subjunctive* mood.

We have nothing particular to point out respecting the imperative mood; but it may be useful to remark that in Portuguese it properly consists of only the *second person*, singular and plural, the first person singular not existing, and the rest being identical with the present subjunctive.

*Examples.*

No le temas  
No le temas

do not (thou) fear him.  
do not (you) fear him.

## Subjunctive Mood.

151. Verbs in this mood are always dependent upon some foregoing proposition, either expressed or understood.

The general rule is to place a verb in the subjunctive mood when it follows the equivalent of the conjunctions *that, if, &c.*, preceded by a verb or adjective expressing *desire, will, command, doubt, fear, possibility, necessity, and the like*. It must be here observed that the English frequently suppress the word *that*, leaving it to be understood, but in other languages it is always expressed.—(Note *a.*) For instance, *je veux qu'il vienne*; or, *voglio che venga*, (I wish he may come.)

Many of the grammars, written for English students of foreign languages, lay great stress upon the difficulties which constantly present themselves in the endeavour to obtain a clear understanding of the subjunctive mood, and they add considerably to these seeming difficulties by multiplying rules in such an unnecessary manner as to confuse rather than assist the learner. They usually say that the subjunctive mood must always be used after expressions such as the following:—

In order that ; it is necessary that ; it is possible that ; it is just that ; I wish that ; I fear that ; and a host of others, each expression having its separate rules, examples, and exercises.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Avant que tes amis se soient aperçus de ton absence.

Before thy friends may have perceived thy absence.

Quelque effort que fassent les hommes leur néant paraît partout.

Whatever effort man may make, his nothingness is everywhere apparent.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Non è che io non lo meriti.

It is not that I do not deserve it.

Non potrebbe darsi che fosse una di queste maschere che si fosse preso divertimento di me ?

Is it not (or, might it not be) possible that it is (or might be) one of these masks who is joking with me ?

Note *a.*—We say that the conjunction *that* is *always* expressed in other languages. This is the general rule, and perhaps without an exception in French ; but in Italian it is occasionally understood, not expressed : this may be said also of the Spanish and Portuguese languages, in which, however, the exceptions are rare.

## Subjunctive Mood.

This system is (perhaps) needed by those alone who are totally unacquainted with grammar, even that of their own language, and who are being taught its principles. Presuming, then, that the nature of the subjunctive mood is understood, for it is the same in all languages, we will add to the general rule, given above, an observation which, it is hoped, will spare much labour and confusion. When the words *may*, *might*, and *should* (signs of the subjunctive) are used with a verb in English, or the phrase may be so turned that one of them *can* be used, the verb in the foreign language may safely be rendered by the corresponding equivalent shown in the models of verbs conjugated (subjunctive mood.) For instance, the sentence, "In order that you may be just," is rendered in French, *Afin que vous soyez juste*: this, like all other similar expressions, requires no special rule, but simply a reference to the form of auxiliary verbs which will show the equivalent of "You may be." Again, "I must come to-morrow," the phrase may be turned thus, "It is necessary that I *should* come to-morrow." An Italian would render it: *Bisogna che io venga domani*.

It must be borne in mind that the word *should* (in English), coming after the conjunction *that*, must not be confounded with *should*, the sign of the *conditional mood*.

The following examples will bear out the rule given, and show its application:—

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Te mando le *digas* se *dirija* á otra persona que *haga*  
mas caso de ello.

I command thee to say to him that he must address  
himself to another person who may make more of it.

¿ En que desais que os *sirva* ?

In what do you wish me to serve you ?

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Para que a comissão *possa* procurar  
In order that the commission may be able to procure.

Importa que *seja* conspicuo no exemplo.

It is necessary to be conspicuous in the example.

Farei o que me pedes, *se puder*.

I will do what thou askest me, if I can.

## FRENCH.

Attendez *que* je revienne.

Wait until I (may) return.

Le juge ordonna *qu'il fût* décapité.

The judge ordered that he should be beheaded.

Il semble *que* les climats extrêmement chauds *soient* contraires aux chevaux.

It seems that (or as if) climates extremely hot are unfavourable to horses.

Mais, *bien que* le roi et la reine *eussent* confondu ainsi leurs provinces séparées en une seule patrie ils conserveraient néanmoins une domination distincte.

But, although the king and queen had thus amalgamated their separate provinces in one sole country, they, nevertheless, preserved a distinct rule.

*Remark.*—The tenses of the subjunctive mood must always accord with those of the indicative and conditional, namely :—

The *present* and *future* of the indicative are accompanied by the present of the subjunctive.

The past of the indicative by the past of the subjunctive.

The conditional by the past of the subjunctive.

## ITALIAN.

*Se* vostra madre ne *fosse* intesa, morirebbe dalla disperazione.

If your mother knew it (or might be aware of it), she would die of despair.

Onde converrà *che* ad un solo mi *doni*.

Then I will be right that I should give myself to one only

Non volete *ch'* io vi *conosca* ?

Do you not wish me to know you ?

Non volete *ch'* io *sappia* i vostri titoli ?

Do you not wish me to know your titles ?

} Same.



SPANISH.

*Cueste* lo que *costare*.

Let it cost what it may (or will).

Corria gran peligro si Dios no me *hubiera* deparado un tio, &c.

I ran great danger if God had not given me an uncle, &c.

Lo mismo diria aunque *fuera* la mula del papa.

He would have said the same even if it had been the pope's mule.

Esto es, que *anduviese* al paso que *quisiese*.

That is, that he should go at the pace he might wish.

Al regresar su mujer la dijo que le *siguiese*.

On the return of his wife, he told her to follow him.

Pensé que nunca *acabase*.

I thought that he would never finish.

The agreement of the tenses in the indicative with those of the subjunctive mood is the same as in French and Italian. } Same.

Also the rule as to placing a verb in the indicative where absolute certainty is expressed. } Same : as,

*Creio* que *ha* um só Deos.

I believe that there is but one God.

PORTUGUESE.

Se a taboa *tivera* dado de si, *houvera* podido custar-lhe a vida.

Had the plank given way, it might have cost him his life.

Ordenava a um dos officiaes que *recebesse* as credencias. He ordered one of his officers to receive the credentials.

Difficil *seria* sua missão, se não *encontrasse* seguranza para suas palavras.

Difficult would be his mission, if he did not find a guarantee for his words.

Não só para ser o primeiro que *tivesse* a distincta honra.

Not only to be the first who might have the distinguished honour.

In the Spanish and Portuguese languages, it will be observed, on reference to the conjugations of verbs, that there are certain tenses of the subjunctive mood which are not possessed (that is, in a separate form) by the French and Italians. The two former have a *future* of the subjunctive, thus employed :—

When a *simple* tense, it refers only to a future subordinate action, as in the third example (Spanish) : *Cueste*

## FRENCH.

152. The subjunctive mood is essentially one of doubt and uncertainty; but sometimes the verb or adjective which usually governs it is capable of conveying the idea of *absolute certainty*: the second verb in such instances assumes the *indicative*, which is a mood of *firm conviction*. The examples will show the distinction.

*Examples.*

Il est heureux ! il *croit* qu'il y a un Dieu.  
 He is happy ! he believes that there is a God.  
*Croyez-vous* qu'il *soit* malade ?  
 Do you think (or believe) that he is ill ?

## ITALIAN.

Same.

*Examples.*

È felice ! *crede* che vi è un Dio.  
 He is happy ! he believes that there is a God.  
*Credete* ch' egli *sia* ammalato ?  
 Do you think (or believe) that he is ill ?

## SPANISH.

lo que *costare*, and the third example (Portuguese): Farei o que me pedes, *se puder*—I will do what thou askest me, if I can (or shall be able). The French would render this: Je ferai ce que tu demandes, si je le *puis*—using the present indicative; while the Italians would say: Se *potrò*—employing the future indicative.

The *compound future* has reference to a *past*, subordinate to a *future* event; as, Si él *hubiere dejado* Madrid antes que llegase su hermano—If he should have left Madrid before his brother might arrive.

This tense, both in its simple and compound forms, may be substituted by the *present* of the subjunctive, (except when the conjunction *si* or *se* (if) precedes the verb); as (in Portuguese), Logo que venha (or vier) o homem—Soon as the man shall come.

The *imperfect* of the subjunctive is not so easily understood. Spanish grammarians usually give it three terminations—*Ra, se, ria*—and quite ignore a separate *conditional mood*, of which *ria* is nevertheless the indication: we, therefore, place this in the conjugations of verbs in its corresponding position, the *conditional mood*, especially as it coincides with the *ria* of the Portuguese, who have also the terminations *ra* and *se*, subject to the same employment as in the Spanish language. No *fixed* particular rules can possibly be laid down for the purpose of showing where these inflections may be used distinctly, or where indiscriminately.

Emanuel Del Mar, in his “Grammar of the Spanish Language,” which is altogether an excellent work, is decidedly mistaken in the *general rule* he gives on their employment. He writes:—“The most general rule which can be given for the employment of these terminations, is, that *ra* or *se* correspond with the signs *might* or *should*, and *ria* corresponds with *would*. This rule, however, will be subject to some exceptions; nevertheless the learner will find it very useful.”

The examples given above (only a few out of many similar which have been collected) clearly show that such a rule would tend to mislead and confuse rather than prove “useful” to the learner. Perhaps the best general rule that can be given is that—

*ria* corresponds with the conditional of other languages; that

*se* refers to a time less remote and less determined than

*ra*; and that the latter often agrees with the *compounds* of the imperfect indicative and of the conditional in other languages.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Infinitive Mood.

## FRENCH.

153. There are many sentences in English where a verb, depending upon another closely preceding it, is put in the form of a participle, but which, in French, is placed in the infinitive mood (Note *a*.)

} Same.

*Examples.*Je l'entends *chanter*.I hear him *singing*.Les airs que j'ai entendu *chanter*.The airs which I have heard *sung*.

The infinitive is often used substantively, or as the subject to another verb. It is then preceded by the definite article (singular masculine.)

} Same.

*Examples.*

Le manger ; le dormir.

Eating ; sleeping.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*La sentiva *cantare*.

I heard her singing.

L'aria che ho sentito *cantare*.

The air which I have heard sung.

*Examples.*

Il leggere ; lo studiare.

Reading ; studying (or study).

Note *a*.—In French, as in other foreign languages, it is difficult to determine what preposition should precede the infinitive, or, rather, should follow the verb or adjective which governs the infinitive. This difficulty must be overcome by practice and attention in reading. It is perfectly useless to give long lists of verbs, adjectives, and their respective prepositions. It will be found that no two grammars agree when they attempt to give correct lists, and that few learners ever endeavour to profit by those which are offered.

Infinitive Mood.

SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

La oigo cantar.  
I hear her singing.  
La cancion que he oido cantar.  
The song which I have heard sung.

} Same.

*Examples.*

El comer ; el estudiar.  
Eating ; reading.

PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese infinitive, besides being used as in French and the other languages, has an advantage which these do not possess. It is capable of varying its termination precisely in the same manner as the future of the subjunctive mood, except in the verb *pôr* and its compounds, thus ceasing to be absolute ; as, *dares tu*, for thee to give, or that thou mayst give ; *depois de fazerem suas orações*, after they had prayed.

} Same

*Examples.*

O estudar ; o dormir.  
Studying ; sleeping.

## Participle Present (or Active, or Gerund.)

## FRENCH.

154. This participle is invariable—that is, it does not change its termination in the feminine gender or plural number, as do adjectives and *past* participles. It always ends in *ant*.

*Examples.*

L'homme	} voyant la	
La femme		
Les hommes		} chose inutile.
Les femmes		

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

155. In French there are many *verbal adjectives* formed from the present participle, and varying, like all other adjectives, according to gender and number; for example: Un homme *charmant*, une femme *charmante*. The adjective is easily perceived here as qualifying a noun; but in the phrase, Un homme, or une femme *charmant* tout le monde (charming all the world), the present participle is apparent: it qualifies nothing, but expresses an action.

156. Substantives are also formed from this participle, and vary according to gender and number; as, Protestant; masc. Protestante; fem. Intrigants, pl. masc.

## ITALIAN.

Same: ending in *ando* or *endo*, according to the conjugation.

*Examples.*

L'uomo	} vedendo la	
La donna		
Gli uomini		} cosa inutile.
Le donne		

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

There is also in Italian an active participle sometimes employed as a verbal adjective, agreeing in number with the noun to which it refers. Its termination being always *e* in the singular, it is common to both genders; as, Un uomo *amante*—a loving man; le donne *leggenti*—the women reading. Le donne che leggono, is the form generally adopted.

Substantives are also formed, varying in number and common to both genders; as,  
 Protestante, masc. and fem. sing.  
 Protestanti, „ pl.

## Participle Present (or Active, or Gerund.)

## SPANISH.

Same: ends in *ando* from verbs of first conjugation; in *iendo* (sometimes *yendo*) from verbs of second and third conjugations.

*Examples.*

El hombre	}	<i>viendo</i> la	
La muger			
Los hombres			cosa inutil.
Las mugeres			

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

Same as Italian.

*Example.*

Las cartas *procedentes* de España.  
The letters coming from Spain.

Same; as—

Un creyente (m. and f.), a believer.  
Los creyentes ( " ), the believers.

## PORTUGUESE.

In the Portuguese language the present participle, or Gerund, is formed by changing the *r* of the infinitive into *ndo*, as *comer*, *comendo*: it is invariable in gender and number.

*Examples.*

O homem	}	<i>viendo</i> a	
A mulher			
Os homens			cosa inutil.
As mulheres			

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

Same.

*Example.*

Como *amantes* e amados filhos.  
Like loving and beloved children.

Same; as—

Protestante, m. and f. singular.  
Protestantes, m. and f. plural.

## FRENCH.

When in English the present participle is employed with the auxiliary verb *to be*, it must be rendered in French as follows:—

*Examples.*

Je parle à monsieur.	}	I <i>am speaking</i> to this
Il recevait.		gentleman.
Il vient aujourd'hui.		He <i>was receiving</i> .
Elle écrit.		He is coming to-day. She is writing.

## ITALIAN.

In the same manner by the Italians, who use also as auxiliaries the verbs *stare*, *venire*, and *andare*, with the participle.

*Examples.*

Io <i>scrivo</i> .	}	I am writing.
Io <i>sto scrivendo</i> .		
Egli <i>cerca</i> .	}	He is seeking.
Egli <i>viene cercando</i> .		

## Participle Past (or Passive.)

157. The participle past in some languages, especially in French, is perhaps the most difficult part of speech to acquire correctly. French philologers have devoted whole volumes to this subject alone; thence, naturally, may disputes and complications have arisen. We think, however, that a comparison with the English language will enable us to simplify some of the rules, and give to those who understand English an advantage which Frenchmen writing only their own language cannot possess.

## With Verb "To be."

158. When preceded by any part of the auxiliary verb *to be*, the past participle assumes the nature of an adjective, agreeing *always* in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it refers. } Same.



## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same, and with auxiliary *estar*.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Vengo hoy.            I am coming to-day.  
 Habla, or            }  
 Está hablando.        } He is speaking.

*Examples.*

Comemos.            We are eating.  
 O homem falla, or }  
 Está fallando.       } The man is speaking.

**Participle Past (or Passive.)**

The Italian past participle is not so difficult as the French ; but it requires great attention.

The Spanish and Portuguese are more easily acquired.

We would here recommend the student to refresh his memory by again reading the observations relating to *direct* and *indirect regimens* (page 82), without understanding which he cannot clearly apprehend the rules on past participles.

**With Verb "To be."**

} Same.

} Same.

## FRENCH.

*Exemples.*

Il est occupé.	He is occupied.
Elle est occupée.	She is occupied.
Les hommes sont occupés.	The men are occupied.
Les femmes sont occupées.	The women are occupied.

## ITALIAN.

*Exemples.*

Egli è occupato.	He is occupied.
Ella è occupata.	She is occupied.
Gli uomini sono occupati.	The men are occupied.
Le donne sono occupate.	The women are occupied.

159. It is frequently used without the auxiliary verb *being expressed*, and then varies according to preceding rule. } Same.

*Example.*

Alors mille circonstances *oubliées* se représentèrent à son esprit.  
Then a thousand circumstances (which had been) forgotten were recollected.

*Example.*

*Finita* la conversazione, egli partì.  
The conversation (being) finished, he left.

## With Verb "To have."

160. With the auxiliary verb *To have*, the past participle is always *indeclinable when followed by the direct regimen*, or accusative.

It is always correct to follow the same rule in Italian, although frequently, when the accusative follows closely upon the participle, the latter agrees for the sake of euphony.

*Exemples.*

<i>J'ai vu</i> votre frère.	I have seen your brother.
<i>J'ai vu</i> votre sœur.	I have seen your sister.
Je vous <i>ai donné</i> quelque chose (Note a.)	
I have given to you something.	

*Exemples.*

Oggi <i>ho visto</i> le vostre sorelle.	
To-day I have seen your sisters.	
Oggi <i>ho ricevute</i> lettere da Messina.	
To-day I have received letters from Messina.	

Note a.—Observe that *vous* is the *indirect*, and *quelque chose* the *direct*, regimen.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Él <i>es</i> amado.	He is loved.
Ella <i>es</i> amada.	She is loved.
Los hombres <i>son</i> amados.	The men are loved.
Las mugeres <i>son</i> amadas.	The women are loved.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Acabada* la conversacion, llamó á su hija.  
The conversation (being) finished, he called his daughter.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Elle <i>é</i> amado.	He is loved.
Ella <i>é</i> amada.	She is loved.
Os homens <i>são</i> amados.	The men are loved.
As mulheres <i>são</i> amadas.	The women are loved.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Conseguido* o dinheiro, e feita a promessa.  
The money being obtained, and the promise (being) made.

With Verb "To have."

The past participle with the verb *To have*, in Spanish, differs entirely from the French and Italian in the rules which govern the change of termination. These are more easily understood both in the Spanish and Portuguese languages.

} Same.

With any part of the verb *haber* (to have), the past participle is *always invariable*.

} Same of *Ter* and *Haber* (Note a.)

Note a.—Formerly the participle past, with the verb *To have*, was sometimes used as an adjective, changing in number and gender: it is no longer so employed.

## FRENCH.

161. It is also *indeclinable* when the nominative alone is expressed. } Same.

*Examples.**J'ai chanté.*

I have sung.

*Ils ont chanté.*

They have sung.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.**Io ho cantato.*

I have sung.

*Noi abbiamo cantato.*

We have sung.

162. But when the past participle (with the verb *To have*) is *preceded* by the *direct regimen*, the former varies according to gender and number.

*Examples.*

Quelque chose que je vous ai donnée.

Something which I have given you.

Ces six mille francs, il me les avait volés à moi.

These six thousand francs, he had stolen them from me.

Vers la route qu'il a parcourue.

Towards the road which he had gone over.

Il a pris ces paroles en mauvaise part, et il vous les a répétées.

He has taken these words in bad part, and has repeated them to you.

In Italian, when the direct regimen *precedes* the participle past, the latter does *not* agree with it in the same manner as in French, where the relative pronoun *who* or *which* carries the same gender as the noun or pronoun to which it refers, and communicates it to the participle.

The rule is :—When any one of the accusative personal pronouns, *lo, il, li, gli, le, me, te, la, ci, si, ne* immediately precedes any part of the verb *avere*, the participle agrees with it in gender and number.

It may also agree with any other *accusative*, whether before or after the verb, for the sake of harmony.

*Examples.*

Questa biancheria *la ho* (Note *a*) fatta io.

I have made this linen.

Ho detto uno sproposito che *la ha* fatta ridere.

I said some nonsense which made her laugh.

Note *a*.—This can be written *l'ho fatta*; but the pronoun is put in full to show more clearly its gender: the same in some of the examples which follow.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Su vista me *ha turbado*.  
 The sight of him has disturbed me.  
 Despues de *haberla leido*.  
 After having read it.  
*Ha habido* varios heridos.  
 He had several wounds.  
 La perdida que *habia experimentado*.  
 The loss which he had experienced.  
 Las desgracias que me *habian sucedido*.  
 The misfortunes which had happened to me.  
*Ho visto* sus billetes y vuestras respuestas.  
 I have seen his letters and your replies.

*Remark.*—*Haber* sometimes forms the compound of the verb *To be*. In such a case, of course, the participle varies according to gender and number; as,

*Habia estado suspendida* la constitucion.  
 The constitution had been suspended.

*Haber* is nearly always the verb used as the auxiliary *To have*; occasionally, however, *tener* is employed, in which case the participle changes only when directly referring to a noun or pronoun expressed in the sentence.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Elle *tem ja visitado* alguns estabelecimentos.  
 He has already visited some establishments.  
 Sem *ter havido* communicacão alguma para terra.  
 Without having had any communication by land.  
 De que *tem dado* sobejas provas.  
 Of which he has given sufficient proofs.  
 Os grandes festejos que se *haviã preparado*.  
 The great festivities which had been prepared.

} Same; as,

Os dois chefes *têm estado estabelecidos* em Londres.  
 The two chiefs have been established in London.

} Unlike the Spanish, *Ter* is nearly always the verb used in Portuguese as the auxiliary *To have*; in any case, the participle is *invariable*.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—Observe well the last example. *Paroles* (words), feminine plural, follows the participle, which is therefore unchanged. The pronoun *Les* (not an article here) is the *direct regimen* relating to *paroles*, and comes before the participle *Répétées*, which, in consequence, takes the form of the feminine plural.

## ITALIAN.

Ma appena le ha vedute le ha invitate a pranzo seco.  
But he has scarcely seen them and asks them to dine with him.  
Avrò per lei quella attenzione che non ho mai avuto per alcuna persona di questo mondo.  
I will have for you that attention which I have never had for any one in this world.

## With Pronominal Verbs.

163. Pronominal verbs, always conjugated with two pronouns of the same person, require the participle to agree in gender and number, *except* when a direct regimen follows it, in which case a part of the verb *To have* is understood. } Same.

*Examples.*

Elle s'est tuée.  
She has killed herself.  
Elle s'est adressé une lettre.  
She has addressed a letter to herself.

*Examples.*

Ella si è uccisa.  
She has killed herself.  
Ella si è tagliato un dito.  
She has cut off a finger.

## With Unipersonal Verbs.

164. With unipersonal verbs, which are used only in the third person singular, the participle is always invariable. } Same, except when a noun closely follows the participle.

*Example.*

Les chaleurs qu'il a fait.  
The warm weather which there has been.

*Examples.*

Che cosa vi è accaduto? What has happened to you?  
Mi è accaduta una cosa strana.  
There has happened to me an extraordinary thing.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Tengo ido* tres veces. I have been three times.  
*Tengo leidos* esos libros. I have read those books.  
 Desde mis ventanas las *tuve cerradas* muchos dias.  
 Even my windows I had (or kept) closed for several  
 days.

With Pronominal Verbs.

The general rule already given applies here: viz.,  
 that with the verb *To have* (which would be the auxi-  
 liary used) the participle is *indeclinable*. } Same.

## With Infinitive.

## FRENCH.

The past participle followed by an infinitive, is a form where, perhaps, more mistakes are made in writing than in any other, even by well-educated Frenchmen themselves. In order to know whether the participle should vary or not, their most correct rule is—To ascertain if the *infinitive* is the *direct regimen*. If so, the participle is *unchanged*.

This last rule involves some amount of study, and is unnecessary for one who understands the English language, and who has only to be guided by the following rules:—

165. When the *infinitive* in *French* is rendered by the *past participle* in *English*, no change must be made in the French participle.

166. When the *infinitive* in *French* is rendered by the *present participle* in *English*, there must be agreement of gender and number in the *French* participle, as, in such a case, the infinitive is *not the regimen*.

*Examples.*

Les airs que j'ai *entendu chanter*.

The airs which I heard *sung*.

Les femmes que j'ai *entendues chanter*.

The women whom I heard *singing*.

## ITALIAN.

As in French, and as already seen, page 252, the infinitive is generally used after a past participle, where, in English, another participle, active or passive, would be employed.

But, *unlike* the French, the Italian past participle, accompanying the infinitive, varies only when the pronouns *la, le, &c.*, *immediately* precede the verb *avere*, according to the rule already given (page 260.)

*Examples.*

Le romanze che ho *sentito cantare*.

The airs which I heard *sung*.

Le donne che ho *sentito cantare*.

The women whom I heard *singing*.



## With Infinitive.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

The Spanish, in this as in all instances, adhere to the rule of making the participle invariable when employed with the verb *Haber* (to have). } Same.

As before remarked, (page 241,) the Portuguese seldom use the preterite indefinite or compound of the present.

Where the French and others would use the verb *To have* and a past participle, the Portuguese would employ the *preterite definite*.

*Examples.*

La cansion que he oido cantar.  
The song which I heard sung.  
La señorita S. se ha hecho oir.  
Miss S. made herself heard.

*Example.*

*Ouvi* dar-lhe pateada na opera.  
I heard her hooted at the opera.

## FRENCH.

Je les ai *vu vaincre*. I saw them *conquered*.

Je les ai *vus vaincre*. I saw them *conquering*.

*Remark.*—These examples show the complicated system adopted by the French, and how much attention is necessary in the employment of the past participle.

Leave out the *s* in the last example, and the meaning will be altogether contrary.

It may also here be noticed that the participle *fait* (made, or caused), when placed immediately before an infinitive, *never* changes.

167. When a word such as *pendant* (during) is understood before the pronoun, *que* (which), the past participle does not change. } Same.

*Example.*

Tous les jours que j'ai souffert.  
All the days (during) which I have suffered.

## ITALIAN.

Quelle donne ; *le ho sentite cantare*.

Those women ; I heard them singing.

*Remark.*—It will be seen by the second example that the Italians leave the sense to be inferred, for no one could suppose the meaning to be that the women were heard *sung*. The French, however, draw the distinction.

*Example.*

Tutti i giorni che ho sofferto.  
All the days (during) which I have suffered.

## Passive Verb.

168. Every verb *passive* can be made *active*, and the contrary. } Same.

169. The French, as a rule, prefer employing the verb in its *active* form.

The passive form is employed by the Italians much more frequently than by the French.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} General rule of *Haber* and participle.

} Same.

Passive Verb.

} Same.

} Same.

The Spanish make very frequent use of the passive }  
form. } Same.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Il était guidé par la force de son génie.  
 He was guided by the force of his genius.  
 La force de son génie l'avait guidé.  
 The force of his genius guided him.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Io sono ingannato da lui.  
 I am deceived by him.  
 Egli m'ha ingannato.  
 He has deceived me.

170. The passive verb is conjugated in all its tenses with the auxiliary *To be*. } Same, by *Essere* (Note a.)

171. The preposition which follows it is not, in French, always the same, some verbs requiring *par*, others *de*. } The preposition *Da* is most commonly used, but sometimes *per*.

## Neuter Verb.

172. This description of verb is easily known by its not admitting a direct regimen after it: for instance, the words *some one*, or *some thing*, cannot follow any of the neuter verbs mentioned below. } Same.

Most of these verbs take the auxiliary *To have* in the compound tenses. Some use the verb *To be*, such as the following:— } Same: the following with the verb *To be*:—

Aller, to go  
 Arriver, to arrive  
 Entrer, to come in

mourir, to die  
 naître, to be born  
 partir, to set out

rester, to remain  
 venir, to come  
 revenir, to return

Andare, to go  
 Arrivare, to arrive  
 Entrare, to come in

morire, to die  
 nascere, to be born  
 partire, to set out

restare, to remain  
 venire, to come  
 rivenire, to return

Note a.—The passive verb is sometimes, in lofty style, conjugated with the verb *venire*.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Es aborrecido de todos.  
He is detested by all.  
Todos le aborrecen.  
All detest him.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Elle é amado de todos.  
He is loved by all.  
Todos o amão.  
All love him.

} Same ; by *ser*.

} Same ; by *ser*.

} The preposition *de* or *por* can be used.

} The prepositions *de*, *por*, *per* are used.

Neuter Verb.

} Same.

} Same.

} The compound tenses of these verbs and of all others, except passive, are formed with *haber*; as, *ha venido*—he has come; *ha llegado*—he has arrived, &c.: thus differing from the French and Italian.

} The compound tenses are nearly always formed with the auxiliary *Ter*, as *tenho dormido*, I have slept.

## Reflective Verb. |

## FRENCH.

173. It is necessary only to remark that, in French, the pronouns are placed *always before* the verb.

*Examples.*

*Se* repentir           to repent.  
*Je me* repens         I repent.

## ITALIAN.

The position of the pronoun is in accordance with the rules already given.

*Examples.*

*Pentirsi*               to repent.  
*Io mi* pento         I repent.

## Unipersonal, or Impersonal Verbs.

174. These are conjugated only in the third person singular. In the compound tenses most of them take the verb *To have*. The following are those chiefly in use :—

Il pleut	it rains.
Il tonne	it thunders.
Il éclaire	it lightens.
Il neige	it snows.
Il gèle	it freezes.
Il dégèle	it thaws.
Il grêle	it hails.
Il faut	it is necessary.
Il arrive	it happens.
Il convient	it becomes (or is convenient.)

} Same.

Piove	it rains.
Tuona	it thunders.
Balena	it lightens.
Nevica	it snows.
Gela	it freezes.
Dighiaccia	it thaws.
Grandina	it hails.
Bisogna	it is necessary.
Accade	it happens.
Convieni	it becomes (or is convenient.)

Reflective Verb.

SPANISH.

The pronoun precedes the verb, except in the infinitive, the participle present, and the imperative.

Examples.

*Se ama* he loves himself.  
*Amarse* to love one's self.

PORTUGUESE.

Reflective verbs in Portuguese take the pronoun before or after the verb; but in the former case a nominative should be expressed.

Examples.

*Amo—me, or*  
*Eu me amo* } I love myself.

Unipersonal, or Impersonal Verbs.

} Same.

*Llueve* it rains.  
*Truena* it thunders.  
*Relampaguea* it lightens.  
*Nieva* it snows.  
*Hiela* it freezes.  
*Deshiela* it thaws.  
*Graniza* it hails.  
*Es menester* it is necessary.  
*Sucede* it happens.  
*Conviene* { it becomes (is convenient.)

} Same.

*Chove* it rains.  
*Troveja* it thunders.  
*Relampaguea* it lightens.  
*Neva* it snows.  
*Gela* it freezes.  
*Degela* it thaws.  
*Graniza* it hails.  
*É preciso, or*  
*precisa-se* } it is necessary.  
*Succede* it happens.  
*Convem* { it becomes (is convenient.)

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
Il importe	it matters.	Importa	it matters.
Il semble	it seems.	Sembra	it seems.
Il paraît	it appears.	Pare	it appears.
Il résulte	it results.	Risulta	it results.

### Negative Form of Conjugation.

The negative, in French, is expressed by *ne*, assisted by *pas*, or *point*; these are fully mentioned in their proper places among the *adverbs*; but it is necessary to give here their position in regard to the verb. } In Italian, *non* is used with a verb.

175. *Ne* is placed immediately after the nominative when the latter precedes the verb: *pas*, or *point* (Note *a*) follows the verb, and is placed between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses. } *Non* always precedes the verb and any pronoun in the accusative or dative case coming before the verb.

#### Examples.

Je *ne* suis *pas* (or *point*.)  
I am not.  
Nous *n'*avons *pas* parlé.  
We have not spoken.  
Je *ne* l'ai *pas* vu.  
I have not seen him.

#### Examples.

*Non* parlo.  
I do not speak.  
*Non* ho parlato.  
I have not spoken.  
*Non* l'ho visto.  
I have not seen him.

Note *a*.—Before the infinitive, *ne* and *pas* (or *point*) can be placed together: it is optional; as, *ne pas* or *point*—parler; or, *ne parler pas* (or *point*.)



SPANISH.	
Importa	it matters.
Parece {	it seems.
	it appears.
Resulta	it results.

PORTUGUESE.	
Importa	it matters.
Parece {	it seems.
	it appears.
Resulta	it results.

### Negative Form of Conjugation.

} In Spanish, *No* is used with a verb.

} In Portuguese, *Não* is used.

} Same of *No*.

} Same of *Não*.

#### *Examples.*

*No* hablo.  
I do not speak.  
*No* ha hablado.  
He has not spoken.  
*No* los hemos visto.  
We have not seen them.

#### *Examples.*

*Não* quero.  
I do not wish.  
*Não* tinha sabido.  
He had not known.  
*Não* lhe darei.  
I will not give to him.

## Interrogative Form of Conjugation.

## FRENCH.

176. The pronoun is placed immediately after the verb in simple tenses and between the auxiliary and participle in compound tenses, being always joined to one of them by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Aimez-vous ?

Do you love ?

Avez-vous fini ?

Have you finished ?

N'a-t-il pas fini ? (Note *a.*)

Has he not finished ?

177. When, in French, a substantive is the subject of the verb, it is usually placed first, the verb being followed by a pronoun.

*Example.*

Mon frère est-il venu ?

Has my brother come ?

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, the interrogative form is usually known by the modulation of the voice in speaking, and by the note of interrogation in writing. This is partly owing to the frequent omission of the nominative pronoun ; but the rule applies also when a substantive becomes the subject of the verb.

*Examples.*

Che cosa volete ?

what do you want ?

Di che avete paura ?

of what are you afraid ?

Vi piaccio io ?

do I please you ?

L'uomo è arrivato ?

has the man arrived ?

Note *a.*—A verb ending in a vowel, and followed by any of the pronouns, *il*, *elle*, or *on*, requires the letter *t* between it and the pronoun, each connected by a hyphen, as in the last example. It must also be remarked, that in the first person singular the *e* mute is changed into *é* (accented), when followed, in interrogative sentences, by *je*; as, *aimé-je* ? (do I love ?) These rules are obviously for the sake of euphony.

## Interrogative Form of Conjugation.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same (Note *a*).

} Same.

*Examples.*

¿ Que quiere de mi ?      what do you want of me ?  
 ¿ De quien se hablan ?      of whom do they speak ?  
 ¿ Que tal tiempo hace ?      what sort of weather is it ?

*Examples.*

Quem está ahí ?      who is there ?  
 Dormio bem ?      did you sleep well ?  
 O senhor chamou-me ?      did you call me, sir ?

Note *a*.—In Spanish, the note of interrogation is placed both at the commencement and completion of a sentence : it is inverted in the former case.

### Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

We will give all the rules that are absolutely necessary to be acquired, and merely hint at some of the nicer distinctions of expression, observations on which belong rather to essays on composition than to a work of this description, which professes mainly to teach the ordinary grammatical construction of these languages.

It is a general rule (given in its place) that two or more substantives in the singular number, united by the conjunction *and*, require the verb to be in the plural; yet there are exceptions to this: for example—

La Bruyère writes: “*Le bien et le mal est en ses mains.*”

La Martine says: “*Le bien et le mal sont de nous et sont à nous.*”

Where such seeming inconsistencies are met, we must try to discover the exact idea of the writer. In the first example the meaning is evidently—*Not only good is in his hands, but also evil; and in the second—Both good and evil are from us, and belong to us.*

Again, words which are synonymous are sometimes coupled by the conjunction *and*; but, as they convey no idea of plurality, the verb is placed in the singular number: for instance—*La miseria in che vive questa città è stato* (Manzoni)—The misery in which this *city and state* exists. Although the latter are two distinct nouns, (so far as words are concerned,) they mean but one object, and the verb is correctly placed in the singular number.

#### FRENCH.

#### ITALIAN.

178. When two or more nominatives of *different persons* are connected by the conjunction *and*, the verb must be in the plural, and made to agree with the *first* person in preference to the others, and with the *second* in preference to the third. } Same.

### Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

So also in Spanish, (and the same in Portuguese,) two nominatives connected by the preposition *with*, frequently have the verb in the plural, and, as often, in the singular number, according to the intention of the writer: as, *El soberano con sus ministros partió ayer*. This means that the sovereign, *accompanied* by his ministers, left yesterday. The whole attention is directed towards the sovereign. If we wish to imply that the *sovereign and his ministers* left, we should put the verb in the plural (*partieron*).

These remarks are considered somewhat important, their scope being chiefly as a warning against the error of adhering too closely to a given rule, and of condemning many passages as inaccurate because some grammars superficially lay down a general rule, without, at the same time, pointing out where it may be (seemingly) departed from.

In regard to the *place* of the *subject*, we have already given its position when a *pronoun*. In other forms it frequently precedes or follows the verb, as taste may dictate; just as, in English, it matters not whether we say, "Thus *finishes* the *story*;" or, "Thus the *story finishes*." A page from a newspaper, or from any modern author, will direct the learner with greater ease and correctness than by the study of numerous rules, which, moreover, are always incomplete, and insufficient for the purpose aimed at.

The following will, however, require attention:—

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Vous et moi, nous partirons bientôt* (Note a.)

You and I will leave soon.

*Vous et votre frère, vous viendrez ce soir.*

You and your brother will come this evening.

179. When several nominatives, all of the *third person*, (singular or plural,) are connected by *and*, the verb of which they are the subjects must be, as a rule, in the plural, whether it precedes or follows them. } Same.

*Examples.*

*Le chien et le cheval sont utiles.*

The dog and the horse are useful.

*Qu'ont reçus mon père et mon frère.*

Which my father and brother have received.

180. A verb preceded by two or more nominatives of *different persons*, connected by the conjunction *or*, must be put in the *plural* number, and agree with the *first person* in preference to the others, and with the *second* in preference to the third. } Same.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Voi ed io andremo insieme.*

You and I will go together.

*Voi e vostro fratello verrete stasera.*

You and your brother will come this evening.

*Examples.*

*L'uomo e la donna cantano bene.*

The man and the woman sing well.

*Non sono arrivati il re ed il principe.*

The king and the prince are not arrived.

Note a.—It must be observed that the pronouns, *we* and *you*, which in English are *understood* in above examples, and in similar instances, are *usually*, but not *always*, expressed in French.

SPANISH.

*Examples.*

*Tu y yo sufrimos.*

Thou and I suffer.

*Tu y él tendreis muchas casas.*

Thou and he will have many houses.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*El hombre y la muger estan hablando.*

The man and the woman are speaking.

*Han salido heridos el sastre y su esposa.*

The tailor and his wife have been wounded.

(Note a.)

} In Spanish, each nominative should have a separate verb.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Vós e eu admittimos.*

You and I admit.

*Vós e ella fallais no mesmo tempo.*

You and she speak at the same time.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*A tyrannia e a iracundia encurtão os dias do despota.*

Tyranny and anger shorten the days of a despot.

*A poesia consista na imitacão, como querem Platão e*

*Aristoteles.*

Poetry consists in imitation, as Plato and Aristotle have it.

} Same.

Note a.—Del Mar says, “ If it (the verb) precedes the subjects, it is generally made to agree in number and person with the nearest.” His rule is incorrect, as shown in the last example : the verb should agree in precisely the same manner as if the subjects preceded the verb. He should have said that *sometimes* when two or more nominatives of different numbers follow the verb, the latter agrees with the nearest, the same verb being understood (although perhaps in a different form as regards number) for the other subjects : as, to use Mr Del Mar’s own example, *Me ha gustado mucho la novela y los poemas* (me *han*, &c., understood.)

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Vous ou moi irons. You or I will go.

Vous ou votre frère parlerez.

You or your brother will speak.

181. A verb having two or more nominatives of the }  
*third person singular* connected by *or* is placed in the } Same.  
*singular* number.

*Example.*

Son père ou sa mère viendra.

His father or mother will come.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

O voi od io andremo. You or I will go.

O voi o vostro fratello parlerete.

You or your brother will speak.

*Example.*

Il padre o suo figlio va parlare.

The father or his son is going to speak.

### Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity.

182. Verbs having such for their nominatives follow as nearly as possible the same rules which obtain in English: that is, a collective noun which is *definite*, and implies one particular body or assemblage, (an army, for example,) should have the verb in the *singular* number. When the noun, or an adverb of quantity having a noun expressed or understood, supposes an *indefinite* quantity, the verb requires to be in the *plural*. We say in English: *the number* of proselytes *increases*; and, *a great number* of people *are* coming. Same in French.

In Italian, the rule differs. (Note *a*.)

A collective noun, whether *definite* or *indefinite*, requires the verb to be in the same number expressed by the article and noun.

The adverb of quantity does not, as in French, act the part of a substantive, but is changed into an adjective agreeing with a noun expressed or understood.

Note *a*.—The rule we have given can always be followed correctly; but exceptions to it are sometimes found in the best writings; for example, Corticelli quotes *La sua famiglia avevano un dì*, &c.—his family had one day, &c. This bears out our remark on the agreement of the verb with its subject. (Page 276.)



SPANISH.

*Examples.*

*O él canta, ó canto yo.*      Either he sings, or I do.  
*O vos hablais, ó hablan ellos.*  
 Either you speak, or they do.

} Same.

*Example.*

*O él ó ella está aquí.*  
 Either he or she is here.

PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

*Ou elle canta, ou canto eu.*      Either he sings, or I do.  
*Ou vós fallais, ou fallão elles.*  
 Either you or they speak.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Ou elle ou ella, está ahí.*  
 Either he or she is there.

**Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity.**

} Same as French.

} Same as Italian.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.**L'armée fut mise en déroute.*

The army was routed.

*Le nombre des rebelles s'accroît.*

The number of rebels increases.

*La plupart des soldats sont malades.*

The greater part of the soldiers are ill.

*La plupart du monde le croit. (Note a.)*

The greater part of the world believes it.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.**Il popolo di quel paese è ricco.*

The people of that country are rich.

*La nobiltà vegliava i suoi privilegi.*

The nobility watched over their privileges.

*Il numero di questi bravi va crescendo.*

The number of these bravos is increasing.

*La maggior parte dei convitati è venuta.*

The greater part of the guests have arrived.

*Molti vogliono parlare.*

Many (persons) wish to speak.

183. The relative pronoun, as a nominative to the verb, bears the same number and person as the noun or pronoun to which it refers. } Same.

*Examples.**C'est moi qui l'ai fait.*

It is I who have done it.

*L'homme qui vient.*

The man who comes.

*Examples.**Son io che l'ho fatto.*

It is I who have done it.

*L'uomo che viene.*

The man who comes.

Note a.—When the adverb of quantity takes after it a *plural* noun, expressed or understood, the verb is put in the plural: if the noun be in the singular, place the verb also in the same number, as shown in the last two examples.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Se *habia* reunido una numerosa *convencion*.  
 A numerous meeting had taken place.  
 El *gobierno ha* resuelto.  
 The government have (or has) resolved.  
 El *consejo* de ministros *ha* tomado resoluciones.  
 The council of ministers have made resolutions.  
 Un gran *numero* de soldados *fueron* apresados.  
 A large number of soldiers were taken prisoners.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Soy *yo que* lo declaro.  
 It is I who declare it.  
 El *hombre que viene*.  
 The man who comes.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

A *capital* inteira o *tem* visitado.  
 The entire capital have visited him.  
 A *população esteve* toda a noite despertada.  
 The population kept awake all night.  
 A *concurrência* das visitas *tem* sido numerosa.  
 The number of visits was numerous.  
 Quando os *povos houverem* conhecido.  
 When the people had known.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Sou *eu que* o digo.  
 It is I who say it.  
 O *homem que falla*.  
 The man who speaks.

The following list of Adverbs we give chiefly for the use of those who are studying more than one of these languages. The comparison will be found of great assistance, on reference, and will save the necessity of applying

## Of Time.

ENGLISH.  
 After ; afterwards.  
 again ; another time.  
 already.  
 always ; ever.  
 before.  
 early.  
 formerly.  
 frequently.  
 hardly.  
 hitherto.  
 last night.  
 late.  
 lately.  
 long since.  
 meanwhile.  
 never.  
 now.  
 often.  
 presently ; soon.  
 quickly.  
 recently.  
 seldom.

FRENCH.  
 Après.  
 de nouveau.  
 déjà.  
 toujours.  
 avant ; auparavant.  
 de bonne heure.  
 autrefois.  
 fréquemment.  
 à peine.  
 jusqu'à présent.  
 la nuit dernière  
 tard.  
 dernièrement.  
 depuis longtemps.  
 en attendant.  
 jamais.  
 à présent.  
 souvent.  
 bientôt.  
 vite.  
 récemment.  
 rarement.

ITALIAN.  
 Dopo.  
 di nuovo.  
 già.  
 sempre.  
 dinanzi ; prima.  
 di buon'ora.  
 anteriormente.  
 frequentemente.  
 appena.  
 fin 'ora.  
 jernotte.  
 tardi.  
 poco fa.  
 molto fa.  
 frattanto.  
 mai.  
 adesso.  
 molte, or spesse volte.  
 subito.  
 presto.  
 di fresco.  
 rare volte.

to dictionaries. Each separate classification is, in English, arranged alphabetically.

### Of Time.

#### SPANISH.

Despues.  
de nuevo ; otra vez.  
ya.  
siempre.  
antes.  
temprano.  
anteriormente.  
frequentemente.  
apénas.  
hasta aqui.  
anoche.  
tarde.  
poco ha.  
mucho ha.  
entretanto.  
jamás ; nunca.  
ahora.  
muchas veces.  
luego.  
presto.  
recientemente.  
rara vez.

#### PORTUGUESE.

Depois.  
novamente ; outra vez.  
já.  
sempre.  
antes.  
cedo.  
antigamente.  
frequentemente.  
apenas.  
até aqui.  
a noite passada.  
tarde.  
ha pouco tempo.  
muito tempo ha.  
entretanto.  
nunca.  
agora.  
muitas vezes.  
logo.  
presto.  
recentemente.  
raramente.

## ADVERBS.

Of Time—*continued*.

## ENGLISH.

shortly.  
 since.  
 sometimes.  
 soon.  
 then.  
 till ; until.  
 to-day.  
 to-morrow.  
 when.  
 whilst.  
 yesterday.  
 yet.

Above.  
 adjoining ; next.  
 around.  
 aside.  
 backwards.  
 before.  
 behind.  
 below.  
 by the side.  
 facing.

## FRENCH.

bientôt.  
 depuis.  
 quelquefois.  
 bientôt.  
 alors.  
 jusque.  
 aujourd'hui.  
 demain.  
 quand.  
 pendant.  
 hier.  
 encore.

## Of Place.

En haut ; dessus.  
 auprès.  
 alentour.  
 de côté ; à part.  
 en arrière.  
 devant.  
 derrière.  
 en bas ; dessous.  
 à côté.  
 en face.

## ITALIAN.

fra poco.  
 dopo.  
 qualche volta.  
 tosto ; subito.  
 allora.  
 fino ; sino.  
 oggi.  
 domani.  
 quando.  
 mentre.  
 jeri.  
 ancora.

Sopra.  
 vicino.  
 intorno.  
 a parte.  
 indietro.  
 avanti.  
 dietro.  
 abasso ; di sotto.  
 da lato.  
 in faccia.

Of Time—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

en breve.  
 desde.  
 algunas veces.  
 pronto.  
 entonces.  
 hasta.  
 hoy.  
 mañana.  
 cuando.  
 mientras.  
 ayer.  
 aun ; todavía.

## PORTUGUESE.

brevemente.  
 desde.  
 algumas vezes.  
 cedo.  
 então.  
 até.  
 hoje.  
 manhã.  
 quando.  
 durante.  
 hontem.  
 ainda ; todavia.

## Of Place.

Arriba.  
 junto.  
 alrededor.  
 aparte.  
 hacia atras.  
 delante.  
 detras.  
 abajo.  
 al lado.  
 en frente.

Arriba.  
 junto.  
 ao redor.  
 á parte.  
 detrás.  
 diante.  
 atrás.  
 em baixo.  
 ao lado.  
 em face.

## ADVERBS.

Of Place—*continued.*

ENGLISH.  
 far.  
 forwards.  
 hence.  
 here.  
 hither.  
 near ; about.  
 out.  
 there ; thither.  
 towards.  
 where.  
 within.  
 without.

FRENCH.  
 loin.  
 en avant.  
 d'ici.  
 ici.  
 par ici.  
 à peu près.  
 dehors.  
 là ; par là.  
 vers.  
 où.  
 en dedans.  
 en dehors.

ITALIAN.  
 lungo.  
 avanti.  
 di quà.  
 qui ; quà.  
 di quà.  
 circa.  
 di fuori.  
 lì ; là ; di là.  
 verso.  
 dove.  
 dentro.  
 fuori ; di fuori.

## Of Order.

After.  
 at last.  
 at the end.  
 before.  
 finally.  
 firstly.  
 lastly.  
 next.  
 on the contrary.

Après.  
 enfin.  
 à la fin.  
 avant.  
 finalement.  
 premièrement.  
 en dernier lieu.  
 en suite.  
 au contraire.

Dopo.  
 in fine.  
 alla fine.  
 avanti.  
 finalmente.  
 primieramente.  
 ultimamente.  
 in seguito.  
 al contrario ; anzi.



Of Place—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

léjos.  
 hacia adelante.  
 de aqui.  
 aqui.  
 acá.  
 cerca.  
 fuera.  
 ahí ; allí ; de allí.  
 hacia.  
 donde.  
 dentro.  
 por fuera.

## PORTUGUESE.

longe.  
 em diante.  
 d'aqui.  
 aqui.  
 cá.  
 cerca ; perto.  
 fóra.  
 ahí ; alli.  
 perto.  
 onde.  
 dentro.  
 fóra.

## Of Order.

Despues.  
 por ultimo.  
 al fin.  
 antes.  
 finalmente.  
 primeramente.  
 ultimamente.  
 en seguida.  
 al contrario.

Depois.  
 por fim.  
 ao fim.  
 antes.  
 finalmente.  
 primeiramente.  
 ultimamente.  
 depois.  
 pelo contrario

## ADVERBS.

Of Order—*continued.*

## ENGLISH.

secondly.  
thirdly.  
together.  
topsy-turvy.

## FRENCH.

secondement.  
troisièmement.  
ensemble.  
sens dessus dessous.

## ITALIAN.

in secondo luogo  
in terzo luogo.  
insieme.  
sotto sopra.

## Of Quality and Comparison.

All.  
almost.  
better.  
besides ; moreover.  
enough.  
how much.  
less.  
little.  
more.  
much.  
partly.  
rather.  
scarcely.  
so.  
so much.  
too much ; too.

Tout.  
presque ; quasi.  
mieux.  
de plus.  
assez.  
combien.  
moins.  
peu.  
plus.  
beaucoup.  
en partie.  
plutôt.  
à peine.  
si.  
tant.  
de trop ; trop.

Tutto.  
quasi.  
meglio.  
di più.  
bastante.  
quanto.  
meno.  
poco.  
più.  
molto.  
in parte.  
piuttosto.  
apena.  
così.  
tanto.  
troppo.

Of Order—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

segundamente.  
 terceramente.  
 juntamente.  
 al revés.

## PORTUGUESE.

em segundo lugar  
 em terceiro lugar.  
 juntamente.  
 ao revez.

## Of Quality and Comparison.

Todo.  
 casi.  
 mejor.  
 además.  
 bastante.  
 cuanto.  
 ménos.  
 poco.  
 mas.  
 mucho.  
 en parte.  
 antes bien.  
 apenas.  
 tan ; así.  
 tanto.  
 demasiado.

Todo.  
 quasi.  
 melhor.  
 de mais ; alem.  
 bastante.  
 quanto.  
 menos.  
 pouco.  
 mais.  
 muito.  
 em parte.  
 antes.  
 apenas.  
 tão ; assim.  
 tanto.  
 demasiado.

## ADVERBS.

Of Quality and Comparison—*continued.*

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
very.	très.	molto.
well.	bien.	bene.
worse.	pis.	peggio.

## Of Doubt.

Perhaps.	Peut-être.	Forse.
----------	------------	--------

## Of Affirmation and Negation.

Also ; too.	Aussi.	Anche.
by no means.	point du tout.	in nessuna maniera.
certainly.	certainement.	certamente.
even.	même.	anche.
indeed.	vraiment.	davvero.
neither ; not even.	non plus.	nemmeno.
no.	non ; non pas (or point).	no.
nothing.	rien ; nullement.	niente.
truly.	certes.	certo.
undoubtedly.	sans doute.	senza dubbio.
yes.	oui.	si.

Of Quality and Comparison—*continued.*

SPANISH.  
 muy.  
 bien.  
 peor.

PORTUGUESE.  
 muito.  
 bem.  
 peor.

## Of Doubt.

Quizá ; acaso.

Talvez ; pode ser.

## Of Affirmation and Negation.

Tambien.  
 de ningun modo.  
 ciertamente.  
 aun.  
 de véras ; verdaderamente.  
 tampoco.  
 no.  
 nada.  
 cierto.  
 indubitavelmente.  
 si.

Tambem.  
 de nenhum modo.  
 certamente.  
 ainda.  
 na verdade ; verdadeiramente.  
 nem.  
 não.  
 nada.  
 certo.  
 indubitavelmente.  
 sim.

## Formation from Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

Many adverbs, in French, are formed by the addition of *ment* to the adjective, in the following manner:—

184. Adjectives ending in a *vowel* in the *masculine* add *ment*; as, *Rare*, *rarement*; *vrai*; *vraiment*: except *beau*, *fou*, *mou*, *nouveau*, which add *ment* to the *feminine*; as, *Bellement*, *follement*, *mollement*, *nouvellement*.

*Note*.—A few in *e mute* are accented; as,  
                   *Conforme*                   *conformément*.

185. Adjectives ending in a *consonant* in the *masculine* form the adverb by adding *ment* to the *feminine* termination; as,

*Naturel* (masc.), *naturelle* (fem.); adv., *naturellement*;  
*except*—*Gentil*, which makes *gentiment*;  
                   *Précis*,                   ,,                   *précisément*,

(accenting fem. *e*.) and a few others; also,

Adjectives ending in *ant* and *ent*, which, with few exceptions, change *nt* into *mmment*; as,

*Constant*                   *constamment*.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, many adverbs are formed as follows:—

Add *mente* to the *feminine* termination of the adjective; as,

*Pieno* (masc.), *piena* (fem.); adv., *pienamente*.  
*Eminente* (masc. and fem.); adv., *eminentemente*.

*Except*—

Adjectives ending in *re* and *le*, preceded by a vowel, which suppress the last *e* when adding *mente*; as,

*Familiare*                   *familiaramente*.  
*Debole*                   *debolmente*.

*Note*.—The superlative of adverbs may be formed by the addition of *issimamente* to the last *consonant* of the adjective; as,

*Savio*                   *wise*.  
*Savissimamente*                   *most wisely*.

## Formation from Adjectives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish, add *mente*, as in Italian, to the *feminine* } Same (Note *a.*): as,  
 termination of adjectives: as,

*Serio*, m.            *seria*, f.            *seriamente*, adv.  
*Sabio*, m.            *sabia*, f.            *sabiamente*, adv.  
*Elegante*, m. and f.            *elegantemente*, adv.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Serio*, m.            *Seria*, f.            *Seriamente*, adv.  
*Sabio*, m.            *Sabia*, f.            *Sabiamente*, adv.  
*Feliz*, m. and f.            *Felizmente*, adv.

When more than one of these adverbs (in English) } Same.  
 are used together in a sentence, the last alone takes the  
 adverbial form of *mente*, but the adjective retains the  
 feminine termination.

*Example.*

Habló *seria*, *sabia* y *elegantemente*.  
 He spoke seriously, wisely, and elegantly.

*Example.*

Resignou-se *philosophica* e *sabiamente* ao seu destino.  
 He resigned himself philosophically and wisely to his  
 destiny.

*Note.*—The superlative of adverbs may be formed } Same by *issimamente*: as  
 by the addition of *issimamente*: as

*Elegante*            elegant.  
*Elegantissimamente*            most elegantly

*Elegante*            elegant.  
*Elegantissimamente*            most elegantly.

*Note a.*—The adverb *communmente* is formed by the addition of *mente* to the *masculine* termination of the adjective, instead of to the feminine.

## ADVERBS.

## Place of the Adverb.

## FRENCH.

186. This almost entirely depends upon taste, and cannot reasonably be subjected to rule.

After a very slight acquaintance with any language, the ear alone will nearly suffice to direct the position of the adverb.

## ITALIAN.

} Same.

## Affirmative.

187. The expression of an *affirmative*, in the following manner, differs from the Italian, and accords with the Spanish and Portuguese languages

*Example.*

Je crois *que oui*. I think so.

*Note.*—The French use the conjunction *Que*.

} In Italian thus:—

*Example.*

Io credo *di sì* I think so.

*Note.*—The Italians use the preposition *Di*.

## Negatives.

188. The *negative* in French being composed of three particles, *ne* and *pas* or *point* and *non*, differs entirely from that of the other languages: its application will be easily apprehended by the following examples and by some remarks which come after.

} The negative in Italian, *no* or *non*, is easily acquired.



## Place of the Adverb.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

## Affirmative.

} As in French.

} Same.

*Example.*Yo digo *que sí* I say yes.*Note.*—The Spanish use the conjunction *que*.*Example.*Eu digo *que sim* I say yes.

Same.

## Negatives.

} *No* is the Spanish negative, although it does not  
} always convey a negative meaning.} Same of *Não* (Note *a.*)*Note a.*—*Não* was formerly written *nam*.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*Je crois que *non*.

I think not.

Êtes-vous malade? *Non*.

Are you ill? No.

*Non, je ne veux pas.*

No, I do not wish.

Je n'ai *pas* beaucoup de fortune.

I am not very rich.

Je n'ai *point* de fortune.

I have no money.

Il *ne* vient *jamais*.

He never comes.

Je *ne* vois *rien*.

I see nothing.

Je n'ai *pas* parlé.

I have not spoken.

Il *ne* parle *qu'à* vous.

He speaks only to you

Pour *ne pas* (or *point*) venir ; orPour *ne* venir *pas* (or *point*).

In order not to come.

Je crains qu'il *ne* soit malade.

I fear he is ill.

Remarks.—*Non* is used when isolated, and without  
 a verb. } *No*, in like manner.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.**No, non* voglio.

No, I do not wish.

*Non* avete il ventaglio?

Have you not the fan?

Perchè *non* viene?

Why does he not come?

Voi *non* me lo avete negato.

You have not denied it to me.

Temo che *non* sia già morto.

I fear that he is already dead.

L' avete visto? *Mai*.

Have you seen him? Never.

*Non* l'ho *mai* visto.

I have never seen him.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.**No, no* quiero.

No, I do not wish.

*No* tengo carne.

I have no meat.

En caso de que ya *no* tenga dinero.

In case he should no longer have any money.

*No* he hablado.

I have not spoken.

Mejor es la sabiduría que *no* la riqueza.

Wisdom is better than wealth.

*Nunca* }  
*Jamas* } ví tal hombre.

I never saw such a man.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.**Não* quero.

I do not wish.

Por que *não* toma alguma cousa?

Why do you not take something.

Esses risos *não* custão lagrimas a ninguém.

This laughter does not cost tears to any one.

*Não* levo senão uma maleta.

I carry only a small portmanteau.

Ainda que *não* seja senão para me dar animo.

If it is only to give me courage.

} *No*, in like manner.} *Não* in like manner.

## FRENCH.

In simple tenses, *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* (Note *a*) immediately after : in compound tenses, *pas* or *point* goes between the auxiliary and the verb.

With an infinitive it is optional to place the verb between *ne* and *pas* or *point*, or after *both* the negatives.

When one of the words, *rien*, *jamais*, *personne*, *plus*, *guère*, *aucun*, *nul*, *nullement*, forms part of a sentence, *pas* or *point* is suppressed.

After the verbs *craindre*, *avoir peur*, and a few others expressing fear or danger, *ne* is frequently used *without* a negative meaning, in reference to the verb which follows.

## ITALIAN.

*Non* always precedes the verb, and the personal pronoun in oblique cases.

*Mai* and  *giammai* mean *never* in answer to a question, but, when employed with a verb in the sense of *never*, they require the accompaniment of a negative, without which the meaning would be *ever*.

After verbs of fearing, doubting, &c., the particle is sometimes used, as in French, without giving a negative meaning to the verb which follows. This phraseology is, however, not so common in Italian.

## Observations on various Adverbs.

*Beaucoup* ; *bien* ; *très*.

The first, when expressing the word *much*, used adjectively in English, resembles a noun in French, and requires after it the preposition *de* ; as,

*Beaucoup d'argent*                      much money.

*Molto*, *poco*, and a few other adverbs, are frequently used as adjectives, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns ; as,

*Molte persone*                                      many persons.

Note *a*.—The difference between *pas* and *point* is that the latter marks a negative more fully, where no doubt whatever exists and a certainty is expressed ; as, (in addition to above examples,) *Je ne suis point Anglais*—I am *not* English. The same can also be expressed with *pas*, which can *always* be correctly used, although sometimes not so emphatically as *point*.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same of *No*.

} Same of *Não*.

} *Nunca* and *jamás* mean *never*, and do not require the negative *no*: *jamás* is sometimes used to express *ever*.

} Same of *nunca* and *jamaís*.

} Same.

} Same.

## Observations on various Adverbs.

} Same of *mucho*, *poco*, &c. ; as,

} Same of *muito*, *pouco*, &c. ; as,

*Muchas cosas*

many things.

*Muitas cousas*

many things.

## FRENCH.

*Bien*, in the sense of *very*, when modifying another adverb or an adjective, differs from *très* in being less energetic.

*Plutôt*, *rather*, must not be confounded with *plus tôt*, *sooner*; the first conveys the idea of *choice*, the latter of *time*.

*Davantage* means *more*, but is generally used at the end of a phrase; it cannot, like *plus* (more) take *de* or *que* after it; as *plus de monde*. The manner of employment is thus:

Le fils est riche, mais le père l'est *davantage*  
The son is rich, but the father is more so.

## ITALIAN.

They are also employed as substantives; as—  
Il *poco* e buono è molto meglio che il *molto* e cattivo.  
Little and good is much better than much and bad.

*Anzi* is an adverb very often used in conversation when answering a question; thus—

Non vuole ch'io entri?  
Do you not wish me to come in?

*Anzi*, lo voglio.

On the contrary, I wish it.

*Anzi che no* means *rather*; as—

Ella è *anzi che no* bellina.  
She is rather pretty.

## SPANISH.

Same ; as,

*Su mucho, su poco* his much, his little.*Demas* and *ademas*. The first expresses *over and above, the rest, remaining*; as,*Lo demas* the rest, or what remains.*Ademas* means *moreover, besides*; as,  
*Ademas de esto* besides this.  
*Ademas, no lo quiero* moreover, I do not wish it.

## PORTUGUESE.

Same ; as,

O *pouco* basta ao moderado ; o *muito* não basta ao pródigo.

Little suffices for the moderate ; much is not enough for the prodigal.

*Nada*, like its equivalents in other languages, is sometimes used substantively, as *o nada*; it is also found (but rarely) in a *plural* form, *Nadas*.

## PREPOSITIONS.

We give a list of nearly all the simple prepositions, but will depart from the usual custom of pointing out that *this one* denotes *subordination*, *that conjunction*, the other indicates *object*, *tendency*, &c., &c., &c. It will be more to the purpose to show their actual and most common use, by giving examples sufficiently copious, and by afterwards adding a few necessary observations. The examples will also show that most of the prepositions convey a variety of meaning, differing according to the words by which they are accompanied: for instance, the

## ENGLISH.

At, to, &c.  
of, with, from, &c.  
in, into, within.  
with.  
after.  
before.  
without.  
against.  
since, as soon as.  
between.  
towards.  
for, in order to.  
by, through.  
according to.  
on, upon.  
under.  
amongst.  
till, until.

## FRENCH.

À.  
de.  
en, dans.  
avec, chez.  
après.  
avant, devant.  
sans.  
contre.  
depuis, dès.  
entre.  
vers, envers.  
pour.  
par.  
selon.  
sur.  
sous.  
parmi.  
jusqu'à.

## ITALIAN.

A.  
di.  
in, dentro.  
con, presso.  
dopo.  
prima, davanti.  
senza.  
contra.  
dopo, fino.  
fra.  
verso.  
per.  
da, per.  
secondo.  
sopra, su, in su  
sotto.  
fra, in mezzo.  
sino.



first on the list, *à*, means *at, to, in, &c.*, and is frequently used (as in the second example, French) where *no* preposition is expressed in English. Again, we cannot always translate literally the meaning according to the equivalent given in the list: for example, *à quoi pensez-vous?* (*Of what are you thinking?*) We could not say *to what, or at what are you thinking?* Sufficient proof is given that *practice in reading* will be found the only successful means of ensuring the *correct* employment of prepositions.

## SPANISH.

Á.  
de.  
en, dentro.  
con.  
despues.  
ante, delante.  
sin.  
contra.  
desde.  
entre.  
hacia.  
para.  
por.  
segun.  
sobre, encima.  
  
bajo.  
  
entre, in medio de.  
hasta.

## PORTUGUESE.

A (Note a.)  
de.  
em, dentro.  
com.  
depois.  
antes, diante.  
sem.  
contra.  
desde.  
entre.  
até, para.  
para.  
por, per.  
segundo.  
sobre, em cima.  
sob, { abaixo, or       debaixo, or  
          { abaxo.       debaxo.  
entre  
até.

Note a.—The preposition *a* is without an accent, like that in Italian. *Á* (accented) is a combination of the preposition and definite article, feminine gender.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Le lendemain j'étais à Paris.

The next day I was *in* Paris.

Il ressemble à un baptistère creusé à la porte d'une cathédrale.

It resembles a baptistery cut out at the door of a cathedral.

Je m'attendais à voir.

I waited to see.

Quelques femmes voilées de leurs mantilles.

Some women veiled *with* (or *by*) their mantles.

Le ciel de Provence a reparu.

The sky of Provence has reappeared.

Je l'ai vu se promener de cime en cime.

I saw him walk from summit to summit.

Ce qui vient de m'arriver.

That which has just happened to me.

Les gens qui m'accompagnaient en Grèce, en Italie.

The people who accompanied me *in* Greece, and *in* Italy.

Dans ces lieux on respire.

In these places, one breathes.

Je pénétrai dans l'intérieur.

I penetrated into the interior.

Il est avec son père.

He is with his father.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

A quel ch'io vedo.

From what I see.

Chi vi obbliga a farlo?

Who obliges you to do it?

Io credo a fatti non a parole.

I believe *in* deeds not words.

Ho speranza di rivedervi.

I hope to see you again.

Voi lo farete più facilmente di me.

You will do it more easily than I.

Signor, che vi è accaduto di male?

Sir, what evil has happened to you?

Lo vedo in pericolo.

I see him in danger.

Che fate qui in questa camera?

What are you doing in this room?

Cercatene la ragione dentro di voi.

Seek the reason within yourself.

L'amo con tutto il cuore.

I love her with all my heart.

Presso gli antichi.

Among the ancients.

Dopo un anno, dopo sei mesi.

After a year, after six months.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Fuéron *á* pasearse.  
 They went to walk.  
 Parámonos *á* la puerta.  
 We stopped at the door.  
 Me fué preciso seguir *á* Don Luis.  
 It was necessary that I should follow Don Lewis.  
 El cuidado *de* los amigos.  
 The care of the friends.  
 Yo, *de* buena gana.  
 I, with good will.  
 Es un hombre *de* tono decisivo.  
 He is a man of a decisive tone.  
 Es una obra *en* prosa.  
 It is a work in prose.  
 Me hizo montar *en* su caballo.  
 He made me mount his horse.  
 Andaba considerando *dentro de* si.  
 He was considering within himself.  
*Con* singular atencion.  
 With singular attention.  
 Está casado *con* la viuda.  
 He is married to the widow.  
*Despues* de esta aventura  
 After this adventure.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Irei *a* Paris.  
 I will go to Paris.  
 Montar *a* cavallo.  
 To mount a horse.  
 Dirijo una copia *d'*esta carta *á* S. A., presidente *do*  
 conselho, e *aos* ministros *do* interior e *das* fin-  
 anças.  
 I address a copy of this letter to his highness, president  
 of the Council, and to the ministers of the interior  
 and of finance.  
 A estrada é bordada *de* precipicios.  
 The road is bordered with precipices.  
 Venho *de* Londres.  
 I come from London.  
*Em* vosso despacho *de* 4 *de* Maio.  
 In your dispatch of the 4th May.  
*Em* Paris ; *no* Porto.  
 In Paris ; in Oporto.  
*Com* as informações precisas.  
 With the precise information.  
*Com* vossas luzes e *com* o conhecimento.  
 With your intelligence and with the knowledge.  
*Depois de* lavrado o termo  
 After the time expires.

## FRENCH.

*Chez les Romains.*  
 Among the Romans.  
*Après avoir traversé le désert.*  
 After having crossed the desert.  
*Avant la naissance du Christ.*  
 Before the birth of Christ.  
*Je me suis arrêté devant la porte.*  
 I stopped before the gate.  
*Sans rencontrer personne.*  
 Without meeting any one.  
*Il est sans famille.*  
 He is without a family.  
*Il presse le pied contre la barrière.*  
 He presses his foot against the barrier.  
*Il le tient entre ses bras.*  
 He holds him within his arms.  
*Il passe entre la maison et la rue.*  
 He passes between the house and the street.  
*Je descends vers le pont.*  
 I descend towards the bridge.  
*Son amour envers moi.*  
 His love towards me.  
*Elle est préparée pour le voyage.*  
 She is prepared for the voyage.  
*Personne ne s'arrête pour l'écouter.*  
 No one stops to listen to him.

## ITALIAN.

Lo vorreste *prima di* partire ?  
 Would you wish it before leaving ?  
*Davanti al re.*  
 Before the king.  
 Alcuni mesi *davanti*.  
 Some months before.  
 Posso partire *senza* disperarmi ?  
 Can I leave without despairing ?  
 Ritorna *in* Francia *senza di* me.  
 He returns to France without me.  
 Ha peccato *contra* qualche potente.  
 He has sinned against some powerful person.  
 Mi tiene sospeso *fra* due giudizi.  
 He holds me in suspense between two opinions.  
 Io vado *verso* Salamanca.  
 I go towards Salamanca.  
 Verrà *verso* le tre.  
 He will come about three o'clock.  
*Per* un anno almeno.  
 For one year at least.  
*Per* dir così.  
 To speak thus.  
*Per* gli occhi, e *per* le orecchie.  
 Through the eyes and ears.  
 Avete *da* mangiare ?  
 Have you anything to eat ?

## SPANISH.

Poco *antes* de comer.  
 A little before dinner.  
*Ante, delante* (or) *en presencia del rey*.  
 Before the king.  
 Ella es *sin* igual en hermosura.  
 She is unequalled in beauty.  
 Pero, no *sin* decirlo.  
 But, not without saying it.  
 El hermano se rebeló *contra* él.  
 The brother rebelled against him.  
 Pero, *para entre* los dos.  
 But, between us two.  
 Si conservas todavía algun amor *hacia* mi.  
 If thou preservest still some love towards me.  
*Por* la tarde, mientras se disponian *para* ir á casa de mi padre.  
 In the evening while they were preparing to go to my father's house.  
 Ni aun le pasó *por* el pensamiento.  
 Nor indeed did it pass through his thoughts.  
*Para* enterarme del motivo.  
 In order to inform me of the motive.  
*Segun* sus propias ideas.  
 According to his own ideas.  
*Encima* (or) *sobre* la mesa.  
 Upon the table.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Para* irem *diante* do hiate imperial.  
 To go before the imperial yacht.  
*Antes da* revolução.  
 Before the revolution.  
*Sem* caução ou fiança.  
 Without caution or security.  
*Sem* mais nem menos.  
 Without more or less (or nevertheless.)  
*Contra* a dependencia da Côrte.  
 Against the dependence of the Court.  
*Entre* duas mesas.  
 Between two tables.  
*Entre* Paris e Londres.  
 Between Paris and London.  
*Para* o fim do mes.  
 Towards the end of the month.  
 Se se perderem *por* desastre.  
 If they should be lost through accident.  
 Serão prestados *pele* ministerio.  
 They will be lent by the ministry.  
*Segundo* nos foi referido.  
 According as it was related to us.  
*Sobre* a terra.  
 Upon the earth.  
 Insistir *sobre* a rigorosa execução.  
 To insist upon the rigorous execution.

## FRENCH.

Ils reparaissent *par* enchantement.  
 They reappear by enchantment.  
 Il parle *selon* sa volonté.  
 He speaks according to his will.  
 La couronne *sur* la tête.  
 The crown upon the head.  
 Le monument qui est *sur* la place.  
 The monument which is *in* the square.  
*Sous* un autre ciel.  
 Under another sky.  
*Jusqu'à* son arrivée.  
 Until his arrival.  
*Depuis* plusieurs semaines.  
 Since several weeks.  
*Dès* que le soleil baisse.  
 Soon as the sun descends.

## ITALIAN.

La virtù è rispettata *da* noi.  
 Virtue is respected by us.  
*Secondo* la stagione.  
 According to the season.  
*Sopra* la tavola.  
 Upon the table.  
 Parleremo *sopra* l'affare.  
 We will talk about the matter.  
*Su* la cima d'un poggio.  
 On the summit of a cliff.  
*Sotto* il cui governo.  
 Under whose government.  
 Stateci *sino* (or *fino*) domani.  
 Stay here until to-morrow.  
*Fino* dai primi suoi anni.  
 Since his earliest years.

## Remarks on various Prepositions.

The preceding examples, while showing how most of the prepositions are employed, serve also to illustrate the following observations:—

} Same.

*En; dans.*—The difference between these two consists in the former being employed before nouns of an indefinite or general signification, and the latter before those in a determinate sense. It may also be remarked that a difference exists

*A.*—This preposition, in Italian, has no accent.

*Per*—has several significations, and is almost equivalent to the two prepositions in French, *pour* and *par*.

## SPANISH.

Hizo que la conversacion recayese *sobre* su familia.  
He managed that the conversation should again fall  
on his family.

*Bajo* el nombre de don Enrique.  
Under the name of Henry.

No podia estar compuesto *hasta* el dia siguiente.  
It could not be repaired until the following day.

*Desde que* le ví.  
Since I saw him.

## PORTUGUESE.

Voltaram-se pois os olhos *para* o sitio *por* onde deveria  
entrar, como *para* mais fixarem a atençaõ.  
Then all eyes were turned towards the place by which  
she should enter, as if in order to fix more the  
attention.

*Debaixo da* mesa.

Under the table.

*Até que* chegarão *ao* paço imperial.

Until they arrived at the imperial court.

*Desde que* foi anunciado.

Soon as it was announced.

## Remarks on various Prepositions.

} Same.

*Á*.—Besides the many different meanings conveyed  
by this preposition, one peculiarity should be  
especially pointed out. A *personal noun* in the  
*accusative* case nearly always takes *á* before it;  
as, *Seguir á Don Luis*—to follow Don Lewis.

} Same.

*A*.—The Portuguese use this preposition in the same  
manner as the Spaniards—that is, with a *per-  
sonal noun*, and sometimes with other nouns, in  
the *accusative* case. See the remarks on the  
Spanish *á*: they equally apply here.

## FRENCH.

between the meaning of *en* campagne, which signifies *campaigning* (as of troops), and *à la* campagne, being *in the country*.

*Avant*; *devant*.—Both of these prepositions mean *before*: the distinction is that *avant* has reference to *time*, and *devant* to *place*.

*Vers*; *envers*.—The former is used before nouns indicating time or place: the latter means, *in respect to*.

## ITALIAN.

*Da*—is also employed in several different ways. Like the French word *chez* it is sometimes used with a personal pronoun to signify habitation or residence: as, *da me*, *da noi*, to my house, to our house. But this mode of expression requires care; it should only be employed when the person denoted by the pronoun may be supposed in the house at the time of a call, for instance—*Venite da me*, means, Come to my house; but *Io vado da me*, means, I am going by myself (of my own accord.) *Non è in casa*, properly expresses, He is not at home.

## Place of the Preposition.

189. This is nearly always *immediately* before its object, thus differing from the English language, where both are frequently separated. } Same.



SPANISH.

Á visitar á mi padre—to visit my father. If in the sentence there should be another *personal noun* of the same number, but of the *dative* case, that in the *accusative* dispenses with the preposition ; as, Enviamos el caballero al juez—we send the gentleman to the judge.

The method of placing *á* before an accusative is to do away with any ambiguity ; for, in the Spanish language, the nominative frequently follows the verb, while an accusative goes before. For this reason the use of the preposition is sometimes required also with nouns *not personal* ; as, Á la vid abrigó la encina—(oak.) Without *á* the meaning would be that the vine sheltered the oak.

*En* with *cuanto* expresses *with regard to*.

*Con* preceded by *para* signifies *towards* ; as,

Es muy amable para con todos.

He is very amiable towards all.

PORTUGUESE.

*Para* before *com* means *towards*, as in Spanish.

*Por* and *per*.—The first is employed in a variety of ways, and corresponds with the French *par* and *pour*, and with the Spanish *por*. *Per* is principally used with the definite article, as *Pelo*, *pela* (by the), instead of *per o*, *per a*.

*Abaixo* and *debaixo*.—The first means *below* ; it also implies *inferiority* ; as,

Está abaixo de mim.

He is under, or inferior to me.

*Debaixo* refers to time and place ; as,

*Debaixo do imperio romano.*

Under the Roman empire.

*Debaixo da mesa.*

Under the table.

*Antes* and *diante*.—The first refers to time, *diante* to place.

Place of the Preposition.

} Same.

} Same.

(Loud applause.)

## FRENCH.

*Example.*

À quoi pensez-vous ?

*What are you thinking about ?*

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

I suoi affari sono *in* disordine.

His affairs are in disorder.

## Repetition.

190. The prepositions *à*, *de*, and *en* should always be repeated before each object where there are many in the same sentence. } Same of *a*, *di*, *in*, *da*, *per*.

*Example.*

Il les pria de venir à la maison s'entretenir avec l'étranger *de* ses conjectures, *de* ses intentions, et *de* ses plans.

He begged them to come to the house and talk with the stranger about his conjectures, intentions, and plans.

*Example.*

*Per* educazione, *per* interesse, *per* consuetudine, *per* imitazione, ne avevano abbracciate le massime.

They had embraced those maxims through education, interest, habit, and imitation.

## SPANISH.

*Example.*Es una obra *en* prosa.

It is a work in prose.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.**Perto das nove horas.*

Nine o'clock about.

## Repetition.

In Spanish it is not necessary (as in French and Italian) to repeat the preposition : much is left to taste, as in English. If to avoid ambiguity, a repetition should, of course, be made. } Same.

*Examples.*Tambien se hace mencion *de* sus bienes, *de* sus costumbres.

Also, mention is made of their possessions and habits.

En este mundo *de* miserias y afflicciones.

In this world of miseries and of afflictions.

*Examples.*Os ministros *do* interior e *das* finanças.

The ministers of the interior and finance.

*Sem* caução e fiança.

Without caution and security.

Of *conjunctions* and *conjunctive expressions* we will not attempt a list. Any dictionary gives the equivalent of every *simple* conjunction, and all the rest belong to that varied idiomatic phraseology, to teach which is far beyond the scope of any grammar on foreign languages. There will be no practical utility in talking about *conjunctions causative*, *conjunctions adversative*, &c. &c., and in classifying such, with a host of others, in formidable

## FRENCH.

191. The conjunctions *et* (and), *ou* (or), may be repeated or not before each object according to taste, as in English. Sometimes they may be altogether left out of the sentence.

*Examples.*

La calomnie, l'incrédulité, le reproche l'accueillirent à Cadiz.

Calumny, incredulity, reproach received him in Cadiz.

Le respect *ou* l'amour.

Either respect or love.

*Note.*—This last example can with equal correctness be rendered—*Ou* le respect *ou* l'amour.

192. *Ni* (nor), employed in negative phrases, may be repeated or not, according to taste.

## ITALIAN.

} Same of *e* (and), *o* (or). (Note *a.*)

*Examples.*

L'una piange, l'altra sospira, l'altra si dispera.

The one weeps, the other sighs, the other despairs.

*Note.*—In Italian, the conjunctions *e* and *o* may add a *d* when coming immediately before a vowel, but this is optional; as,

Il più *od* il meno dipende da voi.

The more or the less depends upon you.

} *Nè* (nor) is usually repeated. (Note *b.*)

*Note a.*—*Non che* is sometimes used in the sense of *and* or *also*.

*Note b.*—We say that *nè* (nor) is usually repeated. This is the general rule, and can always be correctly followed; but the best writers sometimes dispense with the repetition: for example, Manzoni writes: "Il nome di questa, *nè* il casato del personaggio non si trovano nel manoscritto"—Neither the name of this person, nor the house (or family name) of the personage, is found in the manuscript.

columns, sufficient in themselves to discourage the most patient student. We will limit ourselves to the following necessary observations, fully persuaded that the learner who has the diligence to read much, (the only *true* method of acquirement,) will, by degrees, obtain that real information which no grammar can supply.

SPANISH.

} Same of *y* (and), *ó* (or).

*Examples.*

Segun sus propias ideas, sus preocupaciones *y* su conocimiento *ó* ignorancia del mundo.

According to his own ideas, his prejudice, and his knowledge or ignorance of the world.

*Note.*—*Y* changes into *é* before a word beginning with *i* or *hi*, and *ó* into *ú* before *o* or *ho*; as—

Feo *é* inutil                      ugly and useless.  
Pobreza *ú* honor                poverty or honour.

} *Ni* may be repeated or not, as in French.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same of *e* (and), *ou* (or).

*Example.*

São mercadores de ouro, prata, sedas *e* outras fazendas de preço.

They are merchants of gold, silver, silk, and other valuable commodities.

*Note.*—The conjunction *e* is distinguished from the third person singular, present tense of the verb *ser* (*é*) by its having no accent.

} Same of *nem*, *nor*.

FRENCH.

*Example.*

L'or *ni* l'ambition, or *ni* l'or *ni* l'ambition ne nous rendent heureux.

Neither gold nor ambition renders us happy.

193. *Ni* is frequently used to prevent the repetition of the preposition *sans*.

*Example.*

*Sans* parents *ni* fortune, or *sans* parents et *sans* fortune.  
Without relations or fortune.

ITALIAN.

*Example.*

Questo non s'ha da fare *nè* domani, *nè* mai.

This must not be done, either to-morrow or ever.

*Nè* may be used, as in English, to commence a phrase.

*Example.*

*Nè* questo fu l'ultimo.

Nor was this the last.

*Note.*—An accent (') distinguishes the conjunction from the pronoun *ne*.

SPANISH.

*Example.*

No dar à alguno paz *ni* tregua.  
To give some one neither peace nor truce.

PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

*Nem* pelas ruas lhes podem passar com suas procissões,  
*nem* casamentos.  
Nor can they pass them in the streets with their pro-  
cessions or weddings.

} Same of *Ni*.

*Example.*

*Ni* le amo, *ni* le temo.  
Neither do I love him, nor do I fear him.

} Same ; as in last example.





# VOCABULARY.

---

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Abandonment	Abandonnement	Abbandono	Abandono	Abandono
Abasement	Abaissement	Abbassamento	Abatimiento	Humilhação
Abatement	Diminution	Abassamento	Rebaja	Abatimento
Abbey	Abbaye	Abbadia	Abadia	Abbadia
Abbreviation	Abréviation	Abbreviazione	Abreviacion	Abreviação
Abhorrence	Horreur de	Abborrimento	Aborrecimiento	Aversão
Ability	Capacité	Capacità	Capacidad	Capacidade
Abode	Demeure	Abitazione	Habitacion	Morada
Abolishment	Abolissement	Abolizione	Abolicion	Annullação
Abortion	Avortement	Aborto	Aborto	Aborto
Abridgment	Abrégé	Ristretto	Contraccion	Contraccio
Abruptness	Brusquerie	Dirupo	Precipitacion	Precipitação
Abscess	Abcès	Postema	Apostema	Abscesso
Absence	Absence	Assenza	Ausencia	Ausencia
Abstinence	Abstinence	Astinenza	Abstinencia	Abstinencia
Abstract	Résumé	Astratto	Extracto	Abstracto
Absurdity	Absurdité	Assurdo	Absurdo	Absurdo
Abundance	Abondance	Abbondanza	Abundancia	Abundancia
Abuse	Abus	Abuso	Abuso	Abuso

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Abys	Abîme	Abisso	Abismo	Abysmo
Academy	Académie	Accademia	Academia	Academia
Accent	Accent	Accento	Acento	Accento
Acceptance	Acceptation	Accettazione	Aceptacion	Aceitação
Access	Accès	Accesso	Acceso	Acceso
Accident	Hasard	Accidente	Accidente	Accidente
Acclivity	Pente	Acclività	Rampa	Costa arriba
Accommodation	Accommodement	Accomodamento	Comodidad	Accommodação
Accompaniment	Accompagnement	Accompagnamento	Acompañamiento	Accompanhamento
Accomplice	Complice	Complice	Cómplice	Complice
Accomplishment	Accomplissement	Compimento	Cumplimiento	Cumprimento
Accord	Accord	Accordo	Acuerto	Concordia
Account	Compte	Conto	Cuenta	Conta
Accountant	Comptable	Computista	Contador	Contador
Accumulation	Entassement	Accumulazione	Acumulacion	Accumulação
Accuracy	Exactitude	Esatezza	Exactitud	Exacção
Accuser	Accusateur	Accusatore	Acusador	Acusador
Ace	As	Asso	As	As
Ache	Mal ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Dôr
Achievement	Exploit	Fatto	Hazaña	Façonha
Acid	Acide	Acido	Acido	Acido
Acidity	Acidité	Acidezza	Acidez	Acidez
Acknowledgment	Reconnaissance	Riconoscimento	Reconocimiento	Reconhecimento
Acorn	Gland	Ghianda	Bellota	Bolota ; lande
Acquaintance	Connaissance	Conoscenza	Conocimiento	Conhecimento
Acquirement	Acquisition	Acquisto	Adquisicion	Adquisição
Acquittance	Libération	Quitanza	Descargo	Quitação
Acrostic	Acrostiche	Acrostico	Acrostico	Acrostico
Action	Action ; fait	Azione	Accion	Acção
Activity	Activité	Attività	Actividad	Actividade
Actor	Acteur	Attore	Actor	Actor
Actress	Actrice	Attrice	Actriz	Actriz

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Acuteness	Finesse	Acutezza	Agudeza	Agudeza
Adamant	Aimant	Adamante	Iman	Diamante
Adaptation	Adaptation	Adattamento	Adaptacion	Adaptação
Addition	Addition	Addizione	Adicion	Adição
Address	Adresse	Indirizzo	Sobrescrito	Endereço
Adherence; adhesion	Adhérence	Aderenza	Adhesion	Adesão
Adjournment	Ajournement	Il differire	Suspension	Prorrogação
Adjunct	Accessoire	Accessorio	Adjunto	Adjuncto
Adjustment	Ajustement	Aggiustamento	Ajustamiento	Ordem
Administration	Administration	Amministrazione	Administracion	Administração
Admiral	Amiral	Ammiraglio	Almirante	Almirante
Admission	Admission; aveu	Entrata	Admission	Admissão
Admittance	Admission	Entrata	Entrada	Admissão
Admonishment	Admonition	Ammonizione	Amonestacion	Admoestação
Adoption	Adoption	Adottamento	Adopcion	Adopção
Adorer	Adorateur	Adoratore	Adorador	Adorador
Adornment	Ornement	Adornamento	Adorno	Adorno
Adroitness	Adresse	Destrezza	Destreza	Destreza
Adult	Adulte	Adulto	Adulto	Adulto
Adulterer	Adultère	Adultero	Adultero	Adultero
Advance	Avance; progrès	Avanzo	Adelanto	Avanço
Advantage	avantage	Vantaggio	Ventaja	Vantagem
Advent	Avent	Avvento	Adviento	Advento
Adventure	Aventure	Avventura	Aventura	Aventura
Adventurer	Aventurier	Avventuriere	Aventurero	Aventureiro
Adverb	Adverbe	Avverbio	Adverbio	Adverbio
Adversary	Adversaire	Avversario	Adversario	Adversario
Adversity	Adversité	Avversità	Adversidad	Adversidade
Advertisement	Avertissement; avis	Avviso	Aviso	Aviso
Advice	Avis; conseil	Consiglio	Consejo	Conselho
Adviser	Conseiller	Consigliatore	Consejero	Aconselhador
Affability	Affabilité	Affabilità	Afabilidad	Affabilidade

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Affectation	Affectation	Affettazione	Afectacion	Afectação
Affection	Affection	Affetto	Afecto	Afecto
Affliction	Affliction	Afflizione	Aficcion	Afflicção
Affluence	Opulence	Affluenza	Abundancia	Affluencia
Affront	Insulte	Affronto	Afrenta	Affronta
Age	Âge ; siècle	Età	Edad	Idade
Agency	Agence	Agenzia	Agencia	Agencia
Agent	Agent	Agente	Agente	Agente
Aggressor	Agresseur	Agressore	Agresor	Aggressor
Agility	Agilité	Agilità	Agilidad	Agilidade
Agitation	Agitation	Agitazione	Agitacion	Agitação
Agony	Agonie	Angoscia	Agonia	Agonia
Agreement	Accord	Accordo	Concordia	Concordia
Agriculturist	Agriculteur	Agricoltore	Agricultura	Agricultor
Ague	Fièvre intermittente	Febbre intermittente	Calentura intermitente	Sezão
Aid	Aide ; assistance	Ajuto	Ayuda	Ajuda
Aim	But ; vue	Fine ; mira	Mira	Fim ; pontaria
Air	Air	Aria	Aire	Aria
Alabaster	Abbâtre	Alabastro	Alabastro	Alabastro
Alacrity	Vivacité	Alacrità	Alegria	Viveza
Alarm	Alarme	Allarme	Alarma	Rebate
Alcohol	Alcool	Alcool	Alcohol	Alcohol
Alembic	Alambic	Lambicco	Alambique	Alambique
Alertness	Promptitude	Vigilanza	Vigilancia	Vigilancia
Algebra	Algèbre	Algebra	Algebra	Algebra
Allegiance	Allégeance	Fedeltà	Lealtad	Fidelidade
Allegory	Allégorie	Allegoria	Alegoria	Allegoria
Alleviation	Adoucissement	Alleviamento	Alivio	Allivio
Alley	Allée	Vióttolo	Callejuela	Beco
Allotment	Partage	Divisione	Repartimiento	Parte
Allowance	Permission ; pension	Licenza ; paga	Permiso ; pension	Permissão ; paga
Allurement	Attrait	Lusinga	Lisonja	Agrado

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Almanack	Almanach	Almanacco	Almanaque	Almanac
Almighty	Tout-puissant	Onnipotente	Omnipotente	Omnipotente
Almond	Amande	Mándorla	Almendra	Amendoa
Almoner	Aumônier	Elemosiniere	Limosnero	Esmoler
Alms	Aumône	Limósina	Limosna	Esmolas
Alphabet	Alphabet	Alfabeto	Alfabeto	Alphabeto
Altar	Autel	Altare	Altar	Altar
Alteration	Changement	Alterazione	Alteracion	Alteração
Altitude	Hauteur	Altezza	Altura	Altura
Alum	Alun	Allume	Alumbre	Pedra hume
Amazement	Étonnement	Maraviglia	Espanto	Admiração
Amazon	Amazone	Amázzone	Amazona	Amazona
Ambassador	Ambassadeur	Ambasciadore	Embajador	Embaixador
Amber	Ambre	Ambra	Ambar	Ambar
Ambiguity	Ambiguité	Ambiguità	Ambigüedad	Ambiguidade
Ambush	Ambuscade	Imboscata	Emboscada	Emboscada
Amendment	Rectification	Emendazione	Enmienda	Emenda
American	Americain	Americano	Americano	Americano
Amethyst	Améthyste	Amatista	Amatista	Ametista
Amiability	Amabilité	Cortesia	Amabilidad	Amabilidade
Ammunition	Munition de guerre	Munizione	Municion	Munição
Amount	Montant	Montante	Importe	Somma
Amusement	Divertissement	Divertimento	Diversion	Divertimento
Analogy	Analogie	Analogia	Analogia	Analogia
Analysis	Analyse	Análisi	Análisis	Analyse
Anarchy	Anarchie	Anarchia	Anarquia	Anarchia
Anatomy	Anatomie	Anatomia	Anatomia	Anatomia
Ancestry	Âieux	Razza	Linaje	Linhagem
Anchor	Ancre	Âncora	Ancla	Ancora
Anchorite	Anachorète	Anacoreta	Anacoreta	Anachoreta
Anchovy	Anchois	Acciuga	Anchoa	Anchova
Angel	Angel	Ángelo	Ángel	Anjo

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Anger	Colère	Cóllera	Ira	Ira
Angle	Angle	Ángolo	Ángulo	Angulo
Angler	Pêcheur	Pescatore	Pescador	Pescador
Anguish	Douleur	Angoscia	Angustia	Angustia
Animal	Animal	Animale	Animal	Animal
Animation	Animation	Animazione	Animacion	Animacão
Animosity	Animosité	Animosità	Animosidad	Odio
Ankle	Cheville	Collo del piede	Tobillo	Artelho
Annals	Annales	Annali	Anales	Annaes
Annihilation	Anéantissement	Annichilazione	Aniquilacion	Aniquilação
Anniversary	Anniversaire	Anniversario	Aniversario	Anniversario
Announcement	Annonce; avis	Annunzio	Aviso	Aviso
Annoyance	Ennui	Moléstia	Molestia	Discommodo
Annuity	Annuité	Réndita	Renta	Renda annual
Annulment	Annulation	Annullamento	Anulacion	Annullação
Anointment	Onction	Unzione	Uncion	Uncção
Answer	Réponse	Risposta	Respuesta	Resposta
Ant	Fourmi	Formica	Hormiga	Formiga
Antagonist	Antagoniste	Antagonista	Antagonista	Antagonista
Antechamber	Antichambre	Anticámara	Antecamara	Antecamara
Antelope	Antilope	Gazella	Antélope	Antilope
Anthem	Chant; antienne	Antífona	Antífona	Antiphona
Anticipation	Anticipation	Anticipazione	Anticipacion	Anticipação
Antidote	Antidote	Antídoto	Antídoto	Antídoto
Antipathy	Antipathie	Antipatia	Antipatia	Antipathia
Antiquary	Antiquaire	Antiquario	Anticuario	Antiquario
Antiquity	Antiquité	Antichità	Antigüedad	Antiguidade
Anvil	Enclume	Incude	Yunque	Bigorna
Anxiety	Anxiété	Ansietà	Ansia	Anxiedade; ancia
Apartment	Appartement	Appartamento	Cuarto	Andar
Apathy	Apathie	Apatia	Apatia	Apathia
Ape	Singe	Scímia	Mono	Macaco

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Aperient	Apéritif	Aperiente	Aperitivo	Aperiente
Aperture	Ouverture; orifice	Apertura	Abertura	Abertura
Apology	Apologie	Apologia	Apologia	Apologia
Apoplexy	Apoplexie	Apoplessia	Apoplejia	Apoplexia
Apostle	Apôtre	Apóstolo	Apostol	Apostolo
Apothecary	Apothicaire	Speziale	Boticario	Boticario
Appeal	Appel	Appello	Apelacion	Appellação
Appearance	Apparition	Apparenza	Apariencia	Apparencia
Appendage	Appanage	Accessorio	Pertenencia	Appenso
Appetite	Appétit	Appetito	Apetito	Appetite
Applause	Applaudissement	Appláuso	Aplauso	Applauso
Apple	Pomme	Mela; pomo	Manzana	Maçãa
Applicant	Demandeur	Applicatore	Suplicante	Supplicante
Application	Application; demande	Applicazione	Aplicacion	Aplicação
Appointment	Nomination	Assegnamento	Nombramiento; mandato	Mandado
Approach	Approche	Avvicinamento	Acceso	Accesso
Appropriation	Appropriation	Appropriazione	Appropriacion	Appropriação
Approval	Approbation	Approbazione	Aprobacion	Approvação
Approximation	Approximation	Approssimazione	Aproximacion	Approximação
Apricot (and tree)	Abricot; abricotier	Albicocca; albicocco	Albarcoque	Damasco
April	Avril	Aprile	Abril	Abril
Apron	Tablier	Grembiale	Delantal	Avantal
Aptness	Aptitude	Facilità	Aptitud	Aptidão
Aqueduct	Aqueduc	Aquidotto	Acueducto	Aqueducto
Arab	Arabe	Arabo	Árabe	Árabe
Arbitration	Arbitrage	Arbitrato	Arbitrio	Arbitragem
Arbitrator	Arbitre	Árbitro	Arbitrador	Arbitro
Arbour	Berceau	Pérgola	Enramada	Parreiral
Arch	Arche; arc; vouûte	Arco	Arco	Arco
Archangel	Archange	Arcángelo	Arcángel	Archanjo
Archbishop	Archevêque	Arcivêscovo	Arzobispo	Arcebispo
Archer	Archer	Arciere	Arquero	Besteiro

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Architect	Architecte	Architetto	Arquitecto	Architecto
Ardency ; ardour	Ardeur	Ardore	Ardor	Ardor
Argument	Argument	Argomento	Argumento	Argumento
Aridity	Aridité	Aridità	Sequedad	Aridez
Arm	Bras ; arme	Braccio	Brazo	Brço
Armour	Armure	Armadura	Armadura	Armas
Armourer	Armurier	Armajuolo	Armador	Armeiro
Arrangement	Arrangement	Ordine	Arreglo	Arranjo
Arrest	Arrêt ; arrestation	Arresto	Arresto	Detença
Arrival	Arrivée	Arrivo	Llegada	Chegada
Arrogance	Arrogance	Arroganza	Arrogancia	Arrogancia
Arrow	Flèche	Saetta	Saeta	Setta
Arsenic	Arsénique	Arsénico	Arsénico	Arsenico
Art	Art ; artifice	Arte	Arte	Arte
Artery	Artère	Artéria	Arteria	Arteria
Artichoke	Artichaut	Carciofo	Alcachofa	Alcachofra
Article	Article ; objet	Artículo	Artículo	Articulo
Artist	Artiste	Artista	Artista	Artista
Ascent	Ascension ; élévation	Ascendimento	Subida	Eminencia
Ash (tree)	Frêne	Frásino ; orno	Fresno	Freixo
Ashes	Cendres	Cenere	Ceniza	Cinzas
Asparagus	Asperge	Aspárago	Espárrago	Espargo
Aspect	Aspect ; regard	Aspetto	Aspecto	Aspecto
Aspen	Tremble	Trémula	Alamo temblon	Alemo
Ass	Âne	Ásino	Borrico	Asno ; burro
Assailant	Assaillant	Assalitore	Asaltador	Assaltador
Assassin	Assassin	Assassino	Asesino	Assassino
Assassination	Assassinat	Assassinio	Aseginato	Assassinio
Assault	Assaut	Assalto	Asalto	Assalto
Assemblage	Assemblée	Unione	Asamblea	Ajuntamento
Assent	Sanction	Assenso	Asenso	Consentimento
Assertion	Assertion	Asserzione	Asercion	Asserção



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Assignment	Cession	Cessione	Cesion	Assignação
Assistance	Aide	Soccorso	Socorro	Ajuda
Assortment	Assortiment	Assortimento	Surtido	Sortimento
Assurance	Assurance	Sicurtà	Seguridad	Segurança
Asthma	Asthme	Asma	Asma	Asma
Astonishment	Étonnement	Maraviglia	Espanto; sorpresa	Admiração
Astrologer	Astrologue	Astrólogo	Astrólogo	Astrologo
Astronomy	Astronomie	Astronomia	Astronomia	Astronomia
Asylum	Asile	Asilo	Asilo	Asilo
Atmosphere	Atmosphère	Atmosfera	Atmosfera	Atmosfera
Atonement	Expiation	Espiazione	Expiacion	Expição
Attachment	Attachement	Affetto; sequestro	Aficion; embargo	Amizade; confiscação
Attack	Attaque	Attacco	Ataque	Ataque
Attainment	Acquisition	Acquisto	Logro	Acquisição
Attempt	Essai; attentat	Attentato	Atentado	Tentativa
Attendant	Dépendant	Servo	Servidor	Criado
Attention	Attention	Attenzione	Atencion	Atenção
Attire	Vêtement	Abbigliamento	Atavio	Atavio
Attitude	Attitude; pose	Attitudine	Actitud	Attitude
Attorney	Procureur; avoué	Procuratore	Procurador	Procurador
Attraction	Attraction	Attrazione	Atraccion	Atracção
Auction	Enchère	Incanto	Almoneda	Almoeda; leilão
Auditor	Auditeur	Auditore	Auditor	Auditor
August	Auguste	Agosto	Augusto	Agosto
Aunt	Tante	Zia	Tia	Tia
Aurora	Aurore	Aurora	Aurora	Aurora
Authentication	Authenticité	Autenticazione	Autenticidad	Autenticidade
Author	Auteur; cause	Autore	Autor	Autor
Authority	Autorité	Autorità	Autoridad	Autoridade
Autumn	Automne	Autunno	Otoño	Otono
Avarice	Avarice	Avarizia	Avaricia	Avareza
Average	Moyenne; avarie	Avaria; quantità media	Averia; parte igual	Avaria; termo medio

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Aviary	Volière	Uccelliera	Pajarera	Viveiro de passaros
Avowal	Aveu	Confessione	Confesion	Confissãc
Award	Décret	Arbitrato	Decision	Arbitrio
Awe	Terreur	Paura	Miedo	Medo
Awl	Alène	Lésina	Lesna	Sovela
Awning	Tente	Tenda	Toldo	Toldo
Axe	Hache	Seure	Hacha	Machado
Axis	Axe	Asse	Eje	Eixo
Baby	Enfant	Bambino	Criatura	Criança
Bachelor	Garçon	Baccelliere	Soltero	Bacharel
Back	Dos	Dosso	Espalda	Costado
Backbiter	Calomniateur	Maldicente	Detractor	Detractor
Backgammon	Trictrac	Tric-trac	Chaquete	Jogo do gamão
Backwardness	Lenteur	Lentezza	Tardanza	Descuido
Bacon	Lard	Lardo	Tocino	Toucinho
Badge	Signe; marque	Segno	Señal	Insignia
Badger	Blaireau	Tasso	Tejon	Texugo
Badness	Méchanceté	Cattiveria	Maldad	Ruindade
Baggage	Bagage	Bagaglio	Bagaje	Bagagem
Bagpipe	Cornemuse	Cornamusa	Gaita	Gaita
Bail	Caution	Sicurtà	Caucion	Fiança
Bailif	Huissier	Bali; fattore	Alguacil	Alcaide
Baize	Drap de billard	Bajetta	Bayeta	Baeta
Baker	Boulangier	Fornajo	Panadero	Forneiro
Ball	Bal	Ballo; palla	Baile; bola	Dansa; bola
Balloon	Ballon	Pallone	Globo	Balão
Ballot	Boule; scrutin	Ballotta	Balota	Bala
Balm	Baume	Balsamo	Balsamo	Balsamo
Bamboo	Bambou	Bambù	Bamboa	Bambu
Band	Bande	Banda	Venda	Atadura
Bandage	Bandeau	Víncolo	Vendaje	Atadura

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Bandit	Bandit	Bandito	Bandido	Ladrão
Banishment	Bannissement	Esilio	Destierro	Desterro
Bank	Banque ; rive	Banco ; lido	Banco ; orilla	Banco ; margem
Banker	Banquier	Banchiere	Banquero	Banqueiro
Banner	Pavillon	Bandiera	Bandera	Bandeira
Banquet	Banquet	Banchetto	Banquete	Banquete
Baptism	Baptême	Battesimo	Bautismo	Baptismo
Bar	Barrière	Sbarra	Barra	Barra
Barbarity	Barbarie	Barbarie	Barbaridad	Barbaridade
Barber	Barbier	Barbiere	Barbero	Barbeiro
Bargain	Marché	Patto	Pacto	Pacto
Barge	Barque	Barca	Faluca	Barca
Bark	Écorce	Scorza ; barca	Corteza ; barca	Casca ; barca
Barley	Orge	Orzo	Cebada	Cevada
Barometer	Baromètre	Barómetro	Barómetro	Barometro
Baron	Baron	Barone	Baron	Barão
Barrel	Baril	Barile	Barril	Barril
Barrenness	Sterilité	Sterilità	Esterilidad	Esterilidade
Barrister	Avocat	Avvocato	Abogado	Advogado
Barrow	Brouette	Barella	Carreton	Paviola
Base	Base	Base	Base	Base
Bashfulness	Timidité	Timidità	Timidez	Modestia
Basin	Bassin	Bacino	Bacia	Bacia
Basket	Pannier	Paniere	Cesta	Cesto
Bastard	Bâtard	Bastardo	Bastardo	Bastardo
Bat	Chauve-souris	Pipistrello	Murciélago	Morcego
Bath	Bain	Bagno	Baño	Banho
Battalion	Bataillon	Battaglione	Batallon	Batalhão
Battery	Batterie	Batteria	Bateria	Bateria
Battle	Bataille	Battaglia	Batalla	Batalha
Bay	Baie	Baja	Bahia	Bahia
Bayonet	Baïonnette	Bajonetta	Bayoneta	Baioneta

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Beach	Rivage	Lido	Ribera	Praia
Bead	Grain ; perle	Pallottolina ; rosaria	Cuenta	Conta
Beak	Bec	Becco	Pico	Bico
Beam	Poutre	Trave	Viga	Trave
Bean	Fève	Fava	Haba	Fava
Bear	Ours	Orso	Oso	Urso
Beard	Barbe	Barba	Barba	Barba
Bearer	Porteur	Portatore ; latore	Portador	Portador
Beast	Bête	Bestia	Bestia	Besta
Beauty	Beauté	Bellezza	Hermosura	Belleza
Beaver	Castor	Castore	Castor	Castor
Bed	Lit	Letto	Cama	Cama
Bedstead	Couchette	Lettiera ; letto	Cama ; catre	Leito
Bee	Abeille	Ape	Abeja	Abelha
Beech	Hêtre	Faggio	Haya	Faia
Beef	Bœuf	Manzo	Vaca	Vaca
Beer	Bière	Birra	Cerveza	Cerveja
Beetle	Mail ; escarbot	Scarafaggio	Escarabajo	Escaravelho
Beggar	Mendiant	Mendico	Mendigo	Mendigo
Beginning	Commencement	Principio	Principio	Principio
Behaviour	Conduite	Condotta	Conducta	Comportamento
Beholder	Spectateur	Spettatore	Espectador	Espectador
Belief	Croyance	Credenza	Creencia	Credito
Bell	Cloche	Campana	Campana	Sino
Bellows	Soufflet	Soffietto	Fuelle	Folles
Belly	Ventre	Ventre	Ventre	Ventre
Belt	Ceinture	Cintura	Cinto	Boldrié
Bench	Banc	Banco	Banco	Banco
Bending	Courbure	Curvatura	Encorvadura	Curvadura
Benevolence	Bienfaisance	Beneficenza	Beneficencia	Beneficencia
Benefit	Bienfait	Beneficio	Beneficio	Beneficio
Benevolence	Bienveillance	Benevolenza	Benevolencia	Benevolencia

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Bergamot	Bergamote	Bergamotto	Bergamota	Bergamota
Berry	Baie ; graine	Bacca	Baya	Baga
Bet	Pari	Scommessa	Apuesta	Aposta
Betrayer	Traître ; trompeur	Traditore	Traidor	Traidor
Beverage	Boisson	Bevanda	Bebida	Bebida
Bewailing	Lamentation	Lamento	Lamentacion	Lamentação
Bias	Penchant ; prévention	Inclinazione	Inclinacion	Propensão.
Bigamy	Bigamie	Bigamia	Bigamia	Bigamia
Bigot	Bigot ; dévot	Bigotto	Fanatico	Fanatico
Bile	Bile	Bile	Bilis	Bilis
Bill	Note ; bec	Conto ; becco	Cuenta ; pico	Conta ; bico
Billiard	Billard	Bigliardo	Villar	Bilhar
Billiard ball	Bille	Palla da bigliardo	Bola de villar	Pella de bilhar
Billiard cue	Queue de billard	Stecca	Taco	Bilharda
Binder	Relieur	Legatore	Encuadernador	Encadernador
Binding	Bandeau ; reliure	Legamento	Encuadernacion	Encadernação
Biography	Biographie	Biografia	Biografia	Biographia
Birch	Bouleau	Scopa	Abedul	Vidoeiro
Bird	Oiseau	Uccello	Pájaro	Passaro
Birth	Naissance	Nascita	Nacimiento	Nascimento
Bishop	Évêque	Véscovo	Obispo	Bispo
Bit	Morceau ; frein	Pezzo ; freno	Pedazo ; freno	Freio
Bitch	Chienne	Cagna	Perra	Cadella
Bite	Morsure	Morsura	Mordedura	Mordedura
Bitterness	Amertume	Amarezza	Amargura	Amargor
Blackberry	Mûre	Mora	Zarzamora	Amoras
Blackbird	Merle	Merlo	Merla	Merlo
Blacking	Cirage	Lucido	Lustre	Graxa
Blacksmith	Forgeron	Fabbro	Herrero	Ferreiro
Blade	Brin ; lame	Lama	Pala	Pá
Blame	Blâme	Colpa	Culpa	Culpa
Blanket	Couverture	Coltre ; coperta	Manta	Cobertor de lãa

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Blast	Souffle	Soffio	Soplo	Assopro
Blaze	Flamme	Fiamma	Llama	Chamma
Blessing	Bénédiction	Benedizione	Bendicion	Benção
Blindness	Aveuglement	Cecità	Ceguedad	Cegueira
Blister	Vessie	Vescica	Vejiga	Bexiga
Blood	Sang	Sangue	Sangre	Sangue
Blossom	Fleur	Fiore	Flor	Flor
Blot	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Borrão
Blow	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Boar	Sanglier	Cignale ; porco	Jabalí	Javali
Board	Planche	Távola	Tabla	Taboa
Boat	Bateau	Barca	Barca	Barco
Body	Corps	Corpo	Cuerpo	Corpo
Boiler	Chaudière	Caldaja	Caldero	Caldeira
Bolt	Verrou	Chiavistello	Cerrojo	Ferrolho
Bond	Lien ; bon	Óbligo	Obligacion	Obrigaçãõ
Bone	Os	Osso	Hueso	Osso
Bonnet	Bonnet	Bonetto	Bonete	Barrete
Book	Livre	Libro	Libro	Livro
Boot	Botte	Stivale	Bota	Bota
Border	Bord ; frontière	Márgine	Márgen	Borda
Bottle	Bouteille	Bottiglia	Botella	Garrafa
Bottom	Fond	Fondo	Fondo	Fundo
Bow	Arc ; salut	Arco ; inchino	Arco ; reverencia	Arco ; reverencia
Box	Casse ; loge	Scátola ; palchetto	Caja ; palco	Caixa ; camarote
Boy	Garçon	Ragazzo	Muchacho	Rapaz
Braces	Bretelles	Bretelle	Tirantes	Suspensorios
Brain	Cervelle	Cervello	Cerebro	Cerebro
Branch	Branche	Ramo	Ramo	Ramo
Brandy	Eau-de-vie	Acquavite	Aguardiente	Agoa ardente
Brass	Cuivre ; airain	Rame	Bronce	Latão
Breach	Bèche	Breccia	Brecha	Brecha

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Bread	Pain	Pane	Pan	Pão
Breadth	Largeur	Larghezza	Anchura	Largura
Breakage	Casse	Rottura	Rotura	Quebradura
Breakfast	Déjeuner	Colazione	Almuerzo	Almoço
Breast	Sein	Seno	Seno	Peito
Breath	Haleine ; souffle	Fiato	Aliento	Respiração
Breathing	Respiration	Respiro	Aspiracion	Respiração
Breeding	Génération ; éducation	Il generare ; educazione	Crianza	Criação
Breeze	Brise	Venticello	Brisa	Viração
Brewer	Brasseur	Birrajo	Cervecero	Cervejeiro
Bribe	Appât	Imbeccata	Soborno	Soborno
Bribery	Corruption	Corrompimento	Soborno	Sobornação
Brick	Brique	Mattone	Ladrillo	Tijolo
Bride	Nouvelle mariée	Sposa	Novia	Noiva
Bridegroom	Nouveau marié	Sposo	Novio	Noivo
Bridge	Pont	Ponte	Puente	Ponte
Bridle	Bride	Briglia	Brida	Freio
Brief	Bref ; dossier	Breve	Breve	Breve
Brightness	Éclat	Chiarezza	Brillo	Resplendor
Brim	Bord	Lembo	Borde	Borda
Briton	Breton	Inglese	Breton	Britannico
Broker	Courtier	Sensale	Corredor	Corretor
Bronze	Bronze	Bronzo	Bronce	Bronze
Brooch	Broche	Spillo da petto	Broche	Gargantilha
Brook	Ruisseau	Ruscello	Arroyo	Ribeiro
Broom	Balai	Scopa	Escoba	Vassoura
Broth	Bouillon ; potage	Brodo	Caldo	Caldo
Brother	Frère	Fratello	Hermano	Irmão
Brow	Sourcil	Ciglio ; fronte	Ceja	Testa
Brush	Brosse	Scopetta	Cepillo	Escova
Brute	Brute	Bruto	Bruto	Bruto
Bucket	Seau	Secchia	Cubo	Balde

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Buckle	Boucle	Fibbia	Hebilla	Fivela
Bud	Bouton	Boccia ; bottone	Boton	Botão
Bug	Punaise	Cimice	Chinche	Persovejo
Bugle	Bugle	Cornetta	Corneta	Corneta
Building	Édifice	Fábrica	Fábrica	Edificio
Bulk	Masse	Massa	Masa	Grossura
Bull	Taureau	Toro	Toro	Touro
Bullet	Boulet ; balle	Palla	Bala	Bala
Bump	Bosse	Bozza	Bulto	Gallo
Bunch	Grappe	Fascio	Nudo	Mólho
Bundle	Paquet	Fardello	Envoltorio	Feixe
Burden	Fardeau	Cárico	Carga	Carga
Burial	Enterrement	Sepultura	Entierro	Enterro
Burn	Brûlure	Scottatura	Quemadura	Queimadura
Bush	Buisson	Boschetto	Arbusto	Arbusto
Business	Affaire ; occupation	Affare ; negozio	Negocio	Negocio
Butcher	Boucher	Beccajo	Carnicero	Carniceiro
Butter	Beurre	Butirro ; burro	Manteca	Manteiga
Butterfly	Papillon	Parpaglione	Mariposa	Borboleta
Button	Bouton	Bottone	Boton	Botão
Buyer	Acheteur	Compratore	Comprador	Comprador
Buzzing	Bourdonnement	Susurro	Susurro	Zunido
Cab	Cabriolet	Calesse	Cab	Cab
Cabbage	Chou	Câvolo	Col	Couve
Cabin	Cabine	Camerino	Cabaña ; camarote	Camarote
Cabinet	Cabinet	Gabinetto	Gabinete	Gabinete
Cable	Câble	Gómena	Cable	Cabo
Cage	Cage	Gabbia	Jaula	Gaiola
Cake	Gâteau	Mozzo ; pane	Bollo	Bolo
Calculation	Calcul	Calcolo	Calculo	Calculo
Calf	Veau ; mollet	Vitello	Ternero	Vitela



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Calico	Calico; indienne	Tela di cotone	Calicó	Panninho; chita
Call	Appel; visite	Appello; visita	Llamada; visita	Chamada; visita
Calmness	Calme	Calma	Calma	Tranquillidade
Camel	Chameau	Cammello	Camello	Camelo
Candidate	Aspirant	Concorrente	Aspirante	Candidato
Candle	Chandelle	Candela	Candela	Vela
Cane	Canne	Canna	Caña	Canna
Cannon	Canon	Cannone	Cañon	Canhão
Cap	Bonnet; barrette	Berretta	Gorro	Barrete
Cape	Cap	Capo	Cabo	Cabo
Captain	Capitaine	Capitano	Capitan	Capitão
Card	Carte	Carta; biglietto	Naïpe; carta	Carta; bilhete
Care	Souci; soin	Cura	Cuidado	Cuidado
Carelessness	Insouciance	Trascuranza	Descuido	Negligencia
Carpenter	Charpentier	Falegname	Carpintero	Carpinteiro
Carpet	Tapis	Tappeto	Tapete	Tapete
Carriage	Voiture	Carrozza	Carroza	Carruagem
Carrier	Porteur	Portatore	Portador	Portador
Carrot	Carotte	Carota	Zanahoria	Cenoura
Cart	Charrette	Carro	Carro	Carro
Case	Cas; boîte	Cassa; scatola	Caja	Caixa
Cash	Caisse	Cassa; denaro contante	Dinero contante; caja	Dinheiro; caixa
Castle	Château	Castello	Castillo	Castello
Cat	Chat	Gatto	Gato	Gato
Cattle	Bétail (pl. bestiaux)	Bestiame	Ganado	Gado
Cause	Cause	Causa	Causa	Causa
Caution	Précaution; avis	Precauzione	Precaucion	Cautela
Cave	Caverne	Grotta; cava	Cueva	Caverna
Cedar	Cèdre	Cedro	Cedro	Cedro
Cellar	Cave	Cantina	Sótano; cueva	Adega
Cement	Ciment	Cemento	Cimento	Cemento
Centre	Centre	Centro	Centro	Centro

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Ceremony	Cérémonie	Ceremonia	Ceremonia	Ceremonia
Certainty	Certitude	Certezza	Certeza	Certeza
Certificate	Certificat	Certificato	Certificacion	Certidão
Chain	Chaîne	Catena	Cadena	Cadêa
Chair	Chaise	Sedia	Silla	Cadeira
Chalk	Craie	Gesso	Greda	Cré
Challenge	Défi	Sfida	Desafio	Desafio
Chamber	Chambre	Camera; stanza	Camara; cuarto	Camera
Chance	Hasard; chance	Accidente	Accidente	Acaso
Chancellor	Chancelier	Cancelliere	Cancelario	Chanceler
Change	Changement	Cambiamento	Cambio	Cambio
Chapel	Chapelle	Capella	Capilla	Capella
Chapter	Chapitre	Capitolo	Capítulo	Capitulo
Character	Caractère; rôle	Carattere	Character	Caracter
Charcoal	Charbon	Carbone di legna	Carbon de lenha	Carvão de lenha
Charge	Charge; frais	Carico	Cargo	Cargo
Charity	Charité	Carità	Caridad	Caridade
Charm	Charme	Incanto	Encanto	Encanto
Charter	Contrat	Contratto	Contrata	Contrato
Chase	Chasse	Caccia	Caça	Caça
Chasm	Abime	Abisso	Grieta	Abertura
Cheapness	Bon marché	Buon mercato	Baratura	Barateza
Cheat	Trompeur	Ingannatore	Trampista	Enganador
Check	Échec; mandat	Ritegno; contrassegno	Freno; orden	Reprehensão; ordem
Cheek	Joue	Guancia	Mejilla	Face
Cheerfulness	Gaîté	Allegrezza	Alegria	Alegria
Cheese	Fromage	Formaggio	Queso	Queijo
Chemist	Pharmacien	Chimico	Quimico	Chimico
Cherry	Cerise	Ciliegia	Cereza	Cereja
Chess	Échecs	Scacchi	Ajedrez	Xadrez
Chest	Coffre; caisse	Cassa	Caja	Caixa
Chestnut	Châtaigne; marron	Castagno	Castaña	Castanha

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Chicken	Poulet	Pollastro	Polluelo	Pinto
Chief	Chef	Capo	Jefe	Chefe
Child	Enfant	Bambino	Hijo	Menino
Chimney	Cheminée	Cammino	Chimenea	Cheminó
Chin	Menton	Mento	Barba	Barba
Chisel	Ciseau	Cesello	Escoplo	Escopro
Chocolate	Chocolat	Ciocolato	Chocolate	Chocolate
Choice	Choix	Scelta	Eleccion	Escolha
Chop	Côtelette	Costerella	Costilla	Costilha
Christian	Chrétien	Cristiano	Cristiano	Christão
Christmas	Noël	Natale	Navidad	Natal
Church	Église	Chiesa	Iglesia	Igreja
Cinder	Cendre	Cenere	Ceniza	Borrvalho
Cinnamon	Cannelle	Cannella	Canela	Canella
Cipher	Chiffre	Cifra	Cifra	Cifra
Circle	Cercle	Circolo	Círculo	Círculo
Circulation	Circulation	Circolazione	Circulacion	Circulação
Circumference	Circonférence	Circonferenza	Circunferencia	Circunferencia
Circumstance	Circonstance	Circostanza	Circunstancia	Circumstancia
Circus	Cirque	Circo	Circo	Circo
Citizen	Citoyen	Cittadino	Ciudadano	Cidadão
Citron	Citron	Cedrato	Cidra	Cidra
City	Cité ; ville	Città	Ciudad	Cidade
Civility	Civilité	Civiltà	Civilidad	Cortezia
Claim	Demande	Pretensione	Pretension	Pretensão
Class	Classe	Classe	Clase	Classe
Claw	Griffe	Unghione	Garra	Garra
Clay	Argile	Argilla	Arcilla	Barro
Cleanness	Propreté	Pulizia	Limpieza	Limpeza
Clearness	Clarté	Chiarezza	Claridad	Claridade
Cleft	Fente	Fessura	Abertura	Fenda
Clergy	Clergé	Clero	Clero	Clero

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Clerk	Commis	Scrivano	Dependiente	Caixeiro
Cloak	Manteau	Mantello	Capa	Capote
Clock	Horloge ; pendule	Pendolo	Reloj	Relógio
Clog	Sabet	Galoscia	Galocha	Tamanco
Closet	Cabinet	Gabinetto	Gabinete	Gabinete
Cloth	Toile	Tela ; panno	Paño	Panno
Clothes	Habits	Ábiti	Vestidos	Vestidos
Cloud	Nuage	Nube	Nube	Nuvem
Clove	Clou	Garófano	Clavo	Cravo
Club	Club ; bâton	Club ; bastone	Club ; basto	Club ; pao
Cluster	Grappe	Grappolo	Grupo	Grupo
Coach	Carrosse	Carrozza	Coche	Coche
Coachman	Cocher	Cochiere	Cochero	Cocheiro
Coal	Charbon	Carbone	Carbon	Carvão
Coast	Côte	Costa	Costa	Costa
Coat	Habit	Ábito	Casaca	Casaca
Cochineal	Cochenille	Cocciniglia	Cochinilla	Cochonilla
Cock	Coq	Gallo	Gallo	Gallo
Coffee	Café	Caffé	Café	Café
Coffin	Cercueil	Cassa da morto	Ataud	Ataude
Coin	Coin ; monnaie	Moneta	Moneda	Moeda
Cold	Froid ; rhume	Freddo ; raffreddor	Frio	Frio
Collar	Collier	Collaretto	Collar	Collar
Collection	Collection	Raccolta	Coleccion	Collecção
Collector	Collecteur ; receveure	Collettore	Collector	Collector
College	Collége	Collegio	Colegio	Collegio
Colonel	Colonel	Colonnello	Coronel	Coronel
Colony	Colonie	Colonia	Colonia	Colonia
Colour	Couleur	Colore	Color	Côr
Column	Colonne	Colonna	Coluna	Columna
Comb	Peigne	Pettine	Peine	Pente
Combination	Combinaison	Combinazione	Combinacion	Combinação

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Comfort	Agrement ; consolation	Conforto	Confortacion ; consuelo	Conforto
Coming	Approche	Venuta	Venida	Vinda
Commander	Commandant	Comandante	Comandante	Commandante
Commerce	Commerce	Commercio	Comercio	Comercio
Commission	Commission	Commissione	Comision	Commissão
Committee	Comité	Comitato	Comision	Commissão
Companion	Compagnon	Compagno	Compañero	Companheiro
Company	Compagnie	Compagnia	Compañia	Companhia
Comparison	Comparaison	Paragone	Comparacion	Comparação
Competitor	Compétiteur	Competitore	Competidor	Competidor
Complaint	Plainte	Lagno	Queja	Queixo
Completion	Accomplissement	Compimento	Complemento	Cumprimento
Complexion	Teint	Carnagione	Tez	Compleição
Compliment	Compliment	Complimento	Cumplimiento	Cumprimento
Compromise	Compromis	Compromessa	Compromiso	Compromisso
Concealment	En secret	Nascondimento	Escondimiento	Em segredo
Concern	Affaire	Affare	Negocio	Negocio
Concession	Concession	Concessione	Concesion	Concessão
Condition	Condition ; qualité	Condizione	Condicion	Condição
Condolence	Condolérance	Condoglienza	Pésame	Condolencia
Conduct	Conduite	Condotta	Conducta	Conducta
Confession	Confession ; aveu	Confessione	Confesion	Confissão
Confessor	Confesseur	Confessore	Confesor	Confessor
Confidence	Confiance	Confidenza	Confianza	Confiança
Confinement	Détention	Prigionia	Prision	Prisão
Conflict	Confit ; lutte	Conflitto	Conflicto	Conflicto
Congratulation	Félicitation	Congratulazione	Congratulacion	Congratulação
Connexion	Connexion ; famille	Unione ; parentela	Conexion	Connexão
Conquest	Conquête	Conquista	Conquista	Conquista
Conscience	Conscience	Coscienza	Conciencia	Consciencia
Conscript	Conserit	Coscritto	Conscripto	Conscripto
Consecration	Consécration	Consacrazione	Consagracion	Consagração

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Consent	Consentement	Assenso	Asenso	Consenso
Consequence	Conséquence ; suite	Conseguenza	Consecuencia	Consequencia
Conspirator	Conspirateur	Conguirato	Conspirador	Conjurado
Constancy	Constance	Costanza	Constancia	Constancia
Constituent	Constituant	Costituente	Constituyente	Constituinte
Constraint	Contrainte ; gêne	Soggezione	Compulsion	Constrangimento
Contempt	Mépris	Disprezzo	Desprecio	Desprezo
Content	Contentement	Contento	Contento	Contento
Contract	Contrat	Contratto	Contrato	Contracto
Contrast	Contraste	Contrasto	Contraste	Contraste
Contrivance	Invention	Invenzione	Invencion	Invenção
Convenience	Convenance	Comodo	Comodidad	Commodidade
Convent	Convent	Convento	Convento	Convento
Conversation	Conversation ; entretien	Conversazione	Conversacion	Conversação
Conveyance	Transport	Trasporto	Trasporte	Transporte
Convict	Forçat	Condannato	Convicto	Convicto
Convulsion	Convulsion	Convulsione	Convulsion	Convulsão
Cook	Cuisinier	Cuoco	Cocinero	Cozinheiro
Cooper	Tonnelier	Bottajo	Tonelero	Tancoeiro
Copper	Cuivre	Rame	Cobre	Cobre
Copy	Copie	Copia	Copia	Copia
Coral	Corail	Corallo	Coral	Coral
Cord	Corde	Corda	Cuerda	Corda
Cork	Bouchon	Turacciolo	Corcho	Rolha
Corkscrew	Tire-bouchon	Cavaturaccioli	Tirabuzon	Sacarolhas
Corn	Grain ; blé	Grano	Grano	Trigo
Corner	Coin	Canto	Rincon	Canto
Coronation	Couronnement	Incoronazione	Coronacion	Coroação
Coronet	Couronne	Coronetta	Corona	Coroa
Corporal	Caporal	Corporale	Caporal	Corporal
Correspondence	Correspondance	Corrispondenza	Correspondencia	Correspondencia
Cosmetic	Cosmétique	Cosmetico	Cosmetico	Cosmetico

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Cottage	Caban ; chaumière	Capanna	Cabaña	Cabana
Cotton	Coton	Cotone	Algodon	Algodão
Cough	Toux	Tosse	Tos	Tosse
Council	Conseil	Consiglio	Concilio	Concilio
Counsel	Conseil ; avis	Consiglio	Consejo	Conselho
Count	Compte ; comte	Conto ; conte	Cuenta ; conde	Conta ; conde
Countenance	Figure	Fisionomia	Semblante	Semblante
Counter	Comptoir	Banco	Mostrador	Mostrador
Counting-house	Bureau	Banco	Escritorio	Escritorio
Country	Patrie ; pays	Paese ; campagna	Pais ; campo	Patria ; campo
Couple	Couple	Coppia	Par	Par
Course	Cours	Corso	Corrida	Curso
Court	Cour	Corte	Corte	Côrte
Cousin	Cousin	Cugino	Primo	Primo
Cover	Couverture	Coperta	Cubierta	Coberta
Cow	Vache	Vacca	Vaca	Vaca
Coward	Poltron ; lâche	Codardo	Cobarde	Cobarde
Crab	Écrevisse	Granchio	Cangrejo	Caranguejo
Cradle	Berceau	Culla	Cuna	Berço
Crash	Fracas	Fracasso	Fracaso	Estrondo
Cream	Crème	Crema	Crema	Nata
Creator	Créateur	Creatore	Criador	Criador
Credit	Crédit	Credito	Credito	Credito
Creditor	Créancier	Creditore	Acreeedor	Crédor
Crescent	Croissant	Crescente	Creciente	Crescente
Cress	Cresson	Crescione	Berro	Agriões (pl.)
Crier	Crieur	Gridatore	Pregonero	Pregoeiro
Crime	Crime	Delitto	Delito	Crime
Cripple	Boiteux	Zoppo	Estropeado	Coxo
Crisis	Crise	Crisi	Crisis	Crisis
Criterion	Règle	Criterio	Criterio	Criterio
Critic	Critique ; censeur	Critico ; censore	Critico	Critico

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Crockery	Poterie ; fayence	Stoviglie	Loza	Louça
Crop	Récolte	Raccolta	Cosecha	Colheita
Cross	Croix	Croce	Cruz	Cruz
Crow	Corbeau	Corvo	Cuervo	Corvo
Crowd	Foule	Folla	Gentio	Tropel
Crown	Couronne	Corona	Corona	Coroa
Cruelty	Cruauté	Crudeltà	Crueldad	Crueldade
Cruet	Huilier	Ampollina	Ampolleta	Galheta
Crum	Mie	Mica	Miga	Miolo
Crupper	Croupe	Groppa	Gruppa	Garupa
Crust	Croûte	Crosta	Costra	Codea
Cry	Cri	Grido	Grito	Grito
Crystal	Cristal	Cristallo	Cristal	Cristal
Cucumber	Concombre	Cetriuolo	Cohombro	Pepino
Cup	Coupe ; tasse	Coppa ; tazza	Copa ; taza	Taça ; chicara
Cupboard	Armoire	Armario	Armario	Almario
Curb	Frein	Freno	Freno	Freo
Cure	Guérison	Guarigione	Cura	Cura
Currant	Raisin	Uva passa	Grosella	Uva de Corinθο
Curse	Malédiction	Maledizione	Maldicion	Maldição
Curtain	Rideau	Cortina	Cortina	Cortina
Curve	Courbe	Curva	Curva	Curva
Cushion	Coussin	Cuscina	Cojin	Coxim
Custom	Coutume	Costume	Costumbre	Costume
Cutler	Coutelier	Coltellinajo	Cuchillero	Cutileiro
Cutlet	Côtelette	Costerella	Chuleta	Costilha
Cutting	Coupe	Taglio	Cortadura	Cortadura
Dagger	Poignard	Pugnale	Daga ; puñal	Punhal
Dairy	Laiterie	Cascina	Quesera	Queijeira
Damage	Domage ; avarie	Danno	Daño	Damno
Damask	Damas	Dommasco	Damasco	Damasco



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Damp	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Damson	Prune de Damas	Amoscina	Damascena	Ameixa
Dance	Danse	Ballo	Baile	Baile
Danger	Danger	Pericolo	Peligro	Perigo
Darkness	Obscurité	Oscurità	Oscuridad	Escuridade
Dart	Dard	Dardo	Dardo	Dardo
Date	Date ; datte (fruit)	Data ; dáttero (fruit)	Data ; dátíl (fruit)	Data ; tâmara (fruit)
Daughter	Fille	Figlia	Hija	Filha
Daughter-in-law	Belle-fille	Figliastra	Nuera	Nora
Dawn	Aube	Alba	Alba	Alva
Day	Jour	Giorno	Dia	Dia
Deafness	Surdité	Sordità	Sordera	Surdez
Deal	Quantité ; bois blanc (wood)	Quantità ; abete	Cantidad ; madera de pino	Quantidade ; pinho
Dealer	Marchand	Mercante	Mercader	Mercador
Dearness	Cherté	Tenerezza ; prezzo caro	Cariño ; precio subido	Amor ; preço alto
Dearth	Disette	Scarsezza	Carestia	Carestia
Death	Mort	Morte	Muerte	Morte
Debate	Débat	Discussione	Disputa	Debate
Debt	Dette	Débito	Deuda	Divida
Debtor	Débiteur	Debitore	Deudor	Devedor
Decay	Ruine	Decadenza	Decadencia	Decadencia
Deceit	Tromperie	Inganno	Engaño	Engano
Decision	Décision	Decisione	Decision	Decisão
Deck	Pont	Ponte	Puente	Coberta
Decline	Déclin ; décadence	Declivio	Declinacion	Declinação
Decree	Décret	Decreto	Decreto	Decreto
Deed	Action ; acte	Atto ; azione	Acto ; accion	Escritura ; accção
Deepness	Profondeur	Profondità	Profundidad	Profundidade
Default	Défaut	Falta	Falta	Falta
Defeat	Défaite	Rotta	Derrota	Derrota
Defence	Défense	Difesa	Defensa	Defesa
Degree	Degré	Grado	Grado	Grao

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Delay	Délai	Ritardo	Tardanza	Demora
Delicacy	Délicatesse	Delicatezza	Delicadeza	Delicadeza
Delight	Délice	Delizia	Delicia	Delite
Delivery	Remise	Cessione ; liberazione	Entrega	Entrega
Demand	Demande	Domanda	Demanda	Demanda
Democrat	Démocrate	Democratico	Democratico	Democratico
Demon	Démon	Demonio	Demonio	Demonio
Den	Repaire ; antre	Antro	Caverna ; antro	Caverna
Dentist	Dentiste	Dentista	Dentista	Dentista
Departure	Départ	Partenza	Partida	Partida
Deposit	Dépôt ; séquestre	Depósito	Deposito	Deposito
Depth	Profondeur	Profondità	Profundidad	Profundidade
Descent	Descente ; pente	Discesa	Descension	Descida
Desert	Dessert	Deserto	Desierto	Deserto
Design	Dessein ; dessin (drawing)	Disegno	Disegno	Designio
Desk	Pupitre ; bureau	Pulpito	Bufete	Bufete
Despair	Désespoir	Disperazione	Desesperacion	Desesperação
Despatch	Dépêche	Dispaccio	Despacho	Despacho
Detection	Découverte	Scoperta	Descubrimiento	Averiguação
Detention	Retard	Ritardo	Detencion	Detenção
Development	Développement	Sviluppo	Manifestacion	Manifestação
Devil	Diable	Diávolo	Diablo	Diabo
Devotion	Dévouement	Devozione	Devocion	Devoção
Dew	Rosée	Rugiada	Rocio	Sereno
Dial	Cadran	Orologio	Reloj de sol	Relogio do sol
Dialogue	Dialogue	Diálogo	Diálogo	Diálogo
Diameter	Diamètre	Diámetro	Diámetro	Diametro
Diamond	Diamant	Diamante	Diamante	Diamante
Dice	Dés (die, sing.)	Dado (die) dadi (dice)	Dados (dado, sing.)	Dados (dado, sing.)
Dictionary	Dictionnaire	Dizionario	Diccionario	Diccionario
Diet	Diète ; régime	Diéta	Dieta	Dieta
Difficulty	Peine	Difficoltà	Dificultad	Dificuldade

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Dimness	Obscurité	Oscurità	Oscurecimiento	Escuridade
Dip	Plongement	Immersione	Sumersion	Submersão
Diplomatist	Diplomate	Diplomatico	Diplomatico	Diplomatico
Dirt	Saleté; boue	Fango	Cieno	Lama
Discount	Escompte	Sconto	Descuento	Desconto
Disease	Maladie	Malattia	Enfermedad	Doença
Dish	Plat	Piatto	Plato	Prato
Distance	Distance	Distanza	Distancia	Distancia
Ditch	Fossé	Fosso	Zanja	Fosso
Dock	Bassin	Bacino	Dique	Estaleiro
Doctor	Docteur; médecin	Dottore	Médico	Medico
Dog	Chien	Cane	Perro	Cão
Doll	Poupée	Bámbola	Muñeca	Boneca
Door	Porte	Porta	Puerta	Porta
Dot	Point	Punto	Tilde	Ponto
Dove	Colombe	Colombo	Palomo	Pombo
Dozen	Douzaine	Dozzina	Docena	Duzia
Draft	Traite	Cambiale	Tiro	Ordem
Dram	Dragme	Dramma	Dracma	Drachma
Draught	Potion	Pozione	Pocion	Poção
Drawer	Tiroir	Tiratojo	Gaveta	Gaveta
Dream	Songe	Sogno	Sueño	Sonho
Dress	Vêtement	Vestito	Vestido	Vestido
Drink	Boisson	Bevanda	Bebida	Bebida
Driver	Conducteur; cocher	Cocchiere	Cochero	Bolleiro
Drop	Goutte	Goccia	Gota	Gotta
Drug	Drogue	Droga	Droga	Droga
Drum	Tambour	Tamburo	Tambor	Tambor
Drunkard	Ivrogne	Ubbriacone	Borrachon	Beberrão
Dryness	Sécheresse	Siccità	Sequedad	Seccura
Duck	Canard	Ánitra	Ánade	Adem
Due	Droit	Diritto	Derecho	Direito

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Dunce	Ignorant	Ignorante	Tonto	Tolo
Duplicate	Double	Duplicato	Duplicado	Duplicata
Dust	Poussière	Pólvere	Polvo	Poeira
Dwarf	Nain	Nano	Enano	Anão
Dye	Teint	Tintura	Tinte	Tinta
Eagle	Aigle	Águila	Águila	Águia
Ear	Oreille	Orecchio	Oreja	Orelha
Earth	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Earthenware	Poterie	Majolica	Loza	Louça
Earthquake	Tremblement de terre	Terremuoto	Terremoto	Terremoto
Ease	Aise	Riposo	Reposo	Tranquillidade
East	Orient	Oriente	Oriente	Oriente
Easter	Pâques	Pasqua	Pascua	Paschoa
Eccentricity	Originalité	Originalità	Excentricidad	Eccentricidade
Edge	Bord	Márgine	Margen	Borda
Eel	Anguille	Anguilla	Anguila	Anguia
Egg	Œuf	Uovo	Huevo	Ovo
Elbow	Coude	Gómito	Codo	Cotovelo
Elephant	Éléphant	Elefante	Elefante	Elephante
Elm	Orme	Olmo	Olmo	Olmo
Embarkation	Embarquement	Imbarco	Embarcacion	Embarque
Emblem	Emblème	Emblema	Emblema	Emblema
Embrace	Embrasement	Abbraccio	Abrazo	Abraço
Embroidery	Broderie	Ricamo	Bordadura	Recamo
Emerald	Émeraude	Smeraldo	Esmeralda	Esmeralda
Emigrant	Émigré	Emigrante	Emigrado	Emigrante
Enclosure	Enclos	Ricinto	Cercado	Cêrca
End	Bout ; fin	Fine	Fin	Fim
Endeavour	Effort	Tentativo	Esfuerzo	Esforço
Engagement	Occupation	Impegno	Empeño	Empenho

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Engine	Machine	Macchina	Máquina	Machina
Engineer	Ingénieur	Ingegnere	Ingenuero	Enginheiro
Engraver	Graveur	Incisore	Grabador	Grabador
Ensign	Enseigne	Insegna	Insignia	Insignia
Entertainment	Divertissement	Divertimento	Diversión	Diversão
Entrance	Entrée	Entrata	Entrada	Entrada
Envy	Envie	Invidia	Envidia	Inveja
Equal	Égal	Uguale	Igual	Igual
Error	Erreur ; faute	Errore	Error	Error
Escape	Délivrance ; fuite	Fuga ; scappata	Escapada	Fuga
Escort	Escorte	Scorta	Escolta	Escolta
Essence	Essence	Essenza	Esencia	Essencia
Establishment	Établissement	Stabilimento	Establecimiento	Estabelecimento
Estate	État ; fortune	Stato	Estado	Estado
Eve	Veille	Vigilia	Vigilia	Vespera
Evening	Soir	Sera	El anochecer	Noitezinha
Event	Évènement	Evento	Evento	Evento
Evil	Mal	Male	Mal	Maldade
Examination	Vérification	Esame	Examen	Exame
Example	Exemple : modèle	Esempio	Ejemplo	Exemplo
Excess	Excès	Eccesso	Exceso	Excesso
Exchange	Change ; bourse	Cambio ; borsa	Cambio	Cambio
Exchequer	Trésor	Tesoro	Tesoreria	Fisco ; thesouro
Excitement	Excitation	Eccitamento	Excitacion	Excitamento
Excuse	Excuse	Scusa	Excusa	Excusa
Executioner	Bourreau	Carnéfica	Verdugo	Algôz
Exercise	Exercice ; thème	Esercizio	Ejercicio	Exercicio
Exhibition	Exposition	Esposizione	Exhibicion	Exhibiçào
Exile	Exil ; exilé	Esilio	Desterrado	Désterro
Expanse	Étendue	Espansione	Expansion	Expansão
Expense	Dépense	Spesa	Gasto	Despeza

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE
Export	Exportation	Esportazione	Exportacion	Exportação
Express	Expès	Espresso	Expreso	Expresso
Extent	Étendue	Estensione	Extension	Extensão
Exterior	Extérieur	Esteriore	Exterior	Exterior
Extinguisher	Éteignoir	Estinguitore	Apagador	Apagador
Eye	Œil (pl. yeux)	Occhio	Ojo	Olho
Eyebrow	Sourcil	Ciglio	Ceja	Sobrancelha
Eyelid	Paupière	Palpebra	Párpado	Palpebra
Fable	Fable	Favola	Fábula	Fabula
Face	Face ; visage ; figure	Faccia	Cara	Cara
Fact	Fait	Fatto	Hecho	Facto
Factor	Facteur	Fattore	factor	Factor
Factory	Factorie	Fabbrica	Factoria	Feitoria
Fagot	Fagot	Fascina	Haz	Feixe
Failure	Défaut ; faillite	Fallimento ; mancanza	Falta ; quiebra	Falta ; quebra
Fainting	Évanouissement	Svenimento	Desmayo	Desmaio
Fair	Foire	Fiera	Feria	Feira
Fairness	Justice ; proibitè	Giustizia ; onestà	Honradez	Honra
Fairy	Fée	Fate	Hada	Fada
Faith	Foi	Fede	Fé	Fé
Faithfulness	Fidélité	Fedeltà	Fidelidad	Fidelidade
Fall	Chute	Caduta	Caida	Descahida
Falseness	Fausseté	Falsità	Perfidia	Perfidia
Fame	Renommée	Fama	Fama	Fama
Family	Famille	Famiglia	Familia	Familia
Fan	Éventail	Ventaglio	Abanico	Abano
Fancy	Idée ; Imagination	Idea ; immaginazione	Idea ; imaginacion	Imaginação
Fare	Course ; menu	Prezzo ; nolo ; lista	Paga ; pasaje	Pagamento
Farm	Ferme	Masseria	Hacienda	Casal
Farmer	Fermier	Affittajuolo	Hacendado	Lavrador

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Farness	Distance	Distanza	Distancia	Distancia
Farrier	Maréchal-ferrant	Veterinario	Herrador	Ferrador
Fashion	Mode ; façon	Moda	Moda	Moda
Fastness	Fermeté	Fermezza	Firmeza	Firmeza
Fat	Gras	Grasso	Gordo	Gordura ; tina
Fate	Destin ; sort	Destino	Destino	Destino
Father	Père	Padre	Padre	Pai
Father-in-law	Beau-père	Suocero	Suegro	Sogro
Fatigue	Fatigue	Fatica	Fatiga	Fadiga
Fault	Faute	Colpa	Culpa	Falta
Favour	Faveur ; grace	Favore	Favor	Favor
Fear	Peur ; crainte	Paura	Miedo	Medo
Feast	Fête ; festin	Festa	Festin	Festa
Feat	Exploit ; action	Fatto	Hecho	Feito
Feather	Plume	Piuma	Pluma	Pluma
Feature	Trait	Fattezza	Faccion	Feição
February	Février	Febbrajo	Febrero	Fevereiro
Fee	Émolument	Emolumento	Gratificacion	Emolumento
Feebleness	Faiblesse	Debolezza	Debilidad	Debilidade
Feeling	Sentiment	Sentimento	Sentimiento	Sentimento
Felcn	Criminel	Criminale	Reo	Reo
Felt	Fentre	Feltro	Fieltro	Feltro
Female	Femelle	Femmina	Hembra	Femea
Fencing	Escrime	Scherma	Esgrima	Esgrima
Fender	Garde-feu	Arnese di ferro	Enrejado	Amparo
Fern	Fougère	Felce	Helecho	Féto
Fever	Fièvre	Febbre	Fiebre	Febre
Field	Champ	Campo	Campo	Campo
Fig	Figue	Fico	Higo	Figo
Fight	Combat	Conflitto	Combate	Combate
Figure	Figure ; forme	Figura	Figura	Figura
File	Fil ; lime	Fila ; lima	Fila ; lima	Fila ; lima

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Filter	Filtre	Filtro	Filtro	Filtro
Fine	Amende	Multa	Multa	Multa
Fineness	Finesse ; délicatesse	Finezza	Fineza	Fineza
Finery	Luxe	Lusso	Lustre	Gala
Finger	Doigt	Dito	Dedo	Dedo
Fir	Sapin	Abete	Abeto	Abeto
Fire	Feu	Fuoco	Fuego	Fogo
Firework	Feu d'artifice	Fuoco d'artificio	Fuego artificial	Fogo artificial
Fish	Poisson	Pesce	Pez	Peixe
Fisher	Pêcheur	Pescatore	Pescador	Pescador
Fist	Poing	Pugno	Puño	Punho
Fit	Accès	Accesso	Acceso	Acceso
Flame	Flamme	Fiamma	Llama	Flamma
Flash	Éclair	Baleno	Relampago	Relampago
Flatness	Platitude	Pianezza	Llanura	Planeza
Flatterer	Flatteur	Adulatore	Adulador	Lisonjeiro
Flavour	Arome ; parfum	Aroma	Sabor	Sabor
Flax	Lin	Lino	Lino	Linho
Flea	Puce	Pulce	Pulga	Pulga
Fleet	Flotte	Flotta	Flota ; armada	Armada
Flesh	Chair ; viande	Carne	Carne	Carne
Flight	Fuite ; vol	Fuga	Fuga	Fugida
Flint	Caillou	Selce	Pedernal	Pederneira
Flock	Troupeau	Greggia	Manada	Rebanho
Flood	Fleuve ; torrent	Diluvio	Diluvio	Cheia
Floor	Étage	Piano	Piso	Andar
Flour	Farine	Farina	Harina	Farinha
Flower	Fleur	Fiore	Flor	Flor
Flute	Flûte	Fláuto	Flauta	Frauta
Fly	Mouche	Mosca	Mosca	Mosca
Fog	Brouillard	Nebbia	Niebla	Nevoa
Fold	Pli	Piega	Pliega	Dobra



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Follower	Partisan	Seguace	Seguidor	Sequaz
Folly	Folie	Pazzia	Locura	Loucura
Food	Nourriture	Alimento ; cibo	Comida	Alimento
Fool	Fou ; sot	Sciocco	Tonto	Tolo
Foot	Pied	Piede	Pié	Pé
Footman	Laquais	Servitore	Lacayo	Lacao
Force	Force ; vigueur	Forza	Fuerza	Força
Ford	Gué	Guado	Vado	Vao
Forefinger	L'index	Indice	Indice	Index
Forehead	Front	Fronte	Frente	Testa
Forfeit	Amende	Ammenda	Multa	Mulcta
Forge	Forge	Fucina	Fragua	Forja
Forger	Fausaire	Falsario	Falsario	Falsificador
Forgetting	Oubli	Obbligo	Olvido	Esquecimento
Forgiveness	Pardon ; grâce	Perdono	Perdon	Perdão
Fork	Fourchette	Forchetta	Tenedor	Garfo
Form	Forme	Forma	Forma	Forma
Fortune	Fortune	Fortuna	Fortuna	Fortuna
Fountain	Fontaine	Fonte	Fuente	Fonte
Fowl	Poule ; volaille	Pollo	Ave	Ave
Fox	Renard	Volpe	Zorra	Rapoza
Frame	Cadre ; monture	Incassatura ; cornice	Bastidor	Bastidor
Fraud	Fraude	Frode	Fraude	Fraude
Freight	Nolis	Nolo	Flete	Frete
French	Français	Francese	Frances	Francez
Friday	Vendredi	Venerdì	Viérnes	Sesta feira
Friend	Ami	Amico	Amigo	Amigo
Fright	Effroi	Spavento	Espanto	Espanto
Fringe	Frange ; bord	Frangia	Franja	Franja
Frock	Froc ; habit	Abito	Bata	Casaca
Frog	Grenouille	Ranocchio	Rana	Ran
Front	Front ; face	Fronte	Frente	Fronte

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Frost	Gelée	Gelo	Hielo	Geadá
Froth	Écume	Spuma	Espuma	Escuma
Frown	Froncement de sourcils	Cipiglio	Ceño	Carranca
Fruit	Fruit	Frutto	Fruta	Fruta
Fun	Gaieté; amusement	Divertimento	Diversion	Brinco
Fund	Fond	Fondo	Fondo	Fundo
Funeral	Funérailles; enterrement	Funerale	Funeral; entierro	Funeral
Funnel	Entonnoir	Imbutó	Embudo	Funil
Fur	Fourrure	Pelliccia	Pelo	Pelle
Furnace	Fourneau	Fornace	Horno	Fornalha
Furniture	Mobilier; ameublement	Mobiglio	Muebles	Mobilia
Furze	Genêt	Ginestra	Tojo	Tojo
Future	Futur; avenir	Futuro; avvenire	Futuro; venidero	Futuro
Gain	Gain; profit	Guadagno	Ganancia	Ganho
Gallop	Galop	Galoppo	Galope	Galope
Gallows	Gibet	Forca	Horca	Forca
Game	Jeu; gibier	Giuoco; cacciagione	Juego; caza	Jogo; caça
Gaming	Jeu	Giuoco	Juego	Jogo
Garden	Jardin	Giardino	Jardin	Jardim
Garland	Guirlande	Ghirlanda	Guirnalda	Grinalda
Garter	Jarrettière	Legaccia	Jarretera	Liga
Gas	Gaz	Gas	Gas	Gaz
Gate	Porte	Porta	Puerta	Porta
Gauze	Gaze	Velo	Gasa	Volante
Gender	Genre; sexe	Genere; sesso	Género	Genero
General	Général	Generale	General	General
Genius	Génie	Genio	Genio	Genio
German	Allemand	Tedesco; allemanno	Aleman	Allemao
Ghost	Revenant	Spirito; spettro	Espectro	Espirito
Giant	Géant	Gigante	Gigante	Gigante
Giddiness	Vertige	Vertigine	Vértigo	Vertigem

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Gift	Don ; cadeau	Dono	Regalo	Dadiva
Gig	Cabriolet	Carrettella	Calesa	Carrinho
Gin	Genièvre	Gin	Ginebra	Genebra
Ginger	Gingembre	Zénzero	Jengibre	Gingibre
Girdle	Ceinture	Cintura	Cinto	Cintura
Girl	Fille	Ragazza	Muchacha	Menina
Gladness	Joie ; allégresse	Gioja	Alegria	Contentamento
Glass	Verre ; miroir (looking)	Vetro ; specchio	Vidrio ; espejo	Vidro ; espelho
Globe	Globe	Globo	Globo	Globo
Gloom	Obscurité	Oscurità	Oscuridad	Obscuridade
Glory	Gloire	Gloria	Gloria	Gloria
Glove	Gant	Guanto	Guante	Luva
Glue	Glu	Colla	Cola	Cola
Goat	Chévre	Capro	Cabra	Cabra
Godmother ; god- father	Marraine ; parrain	Madrina (compare patrino)	Madrina ; padrino	Madrinha ; padrinho
Godson	Filleul	Figlioccio	Ahijado	Afilhado
Gold	Or	Oro	Oro	Ouro
Goldsmith	Orfèvre	Orefice	Orifice	Ourives
Goodness	Bonté	Bontà	Bondad	Bondade
Goose	Oie	Oca	Ganso ; oca	Pato ; ganso
Gooseberry	Groseille	Uva spina	Uva espin	Uva espin
Gospel	Evangile	Vangelo	Evangelio	Evangelho
Gout	Goutte	Gotta	Gota	Gota
Governor	Gouverneur	Governatore	Gobernador	Governador
Gown	Robe	Gonna	Toga ; bata	Toga
Grace	Grâce	Grazia	Gracia	Graça
Grammar	Grammaire	Grammatica	Gramatica	Grammatica
Grant	Concession	Concessione	Concesion	Concessão
Grape	Raisin	Uva	Uva	Uva
Grass	Herbe ; gazon	Erba	Yerba	Herva
Grate	Grille	Grata	Reja	Grade

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Grave	Fosse ; tombeau	Fossa ; tomba	Sepultura	Sepultura
Grease	Graisse	Grasso	Grasa	Graxa
Grecian	Grec	Greco	Griego	Grego
Green	Vert	Verde	Verde	Verde
Grief	Chagrin ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Tristeza
Groom	Valet	Valletto	Establero	Moço da estrebaria
Ground	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Guarantee	Garantie	Garanzia	Garantia	Garantia
Guard	Garde	Guardia	Guardia	Guarda
Guest	Hôte	Óspite	Huesped	Hospede
Guide	Guide	Guida	Guia	Guia
Gum	Gomme	Gomma	Goma	Gomma
Gun	Fusil ; canon	Fucile	Fusil ; cañon	Canhão
Haberdashery	Mercerie	Merceria	Merceria	Mercearia
Habit	Habitude	Abitudine	Costumbre	Costume
Hail	Grêle	Grândine	Granizo	Granizo
Hair	Cheveu	Capello	Cabello	Cabello
Half	Moitié	Metà	Mitad	Metade
Hall	Salle	Sala	Sala	Sala
Ham	Jambon	Prosciutto	Jamon	Presunto
Hammer	Marteau	Martello	Martillo	Martello
Hamper	Panier	Cesto	Cesto	Canastra
Hand	Main	Mano	Mano	Mão
Handle	Manche	Mánico	Mango	Punho
Hardness	Dureté	Durezza	Dureza	Dureza
Hare	Lièvre	Lepre	Liebre	Lebre
Harm	Mal	Male	Mal	Maldade
Harness	Harnais	Arnese	Guarniciones	Arnez
Harp	Harpe	Árpa	Arpa	Harpa
Harvest	Récolte	Ricolta	Cosecha	Colheita
Haste	Hâte	Fretta	Priesa	Pressa

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Hat	Chapeau	Cappello	Sombrero	Chapeo
Hawk	Faucon	Falcone	Halcon	Falcão
Hay	Foin	Fieno	Heno	Feno
Head	Tête	Testa ; capo	Cabeza	Cabeça
Health	Santé	Salute ; sanità	Salud	Saudé
Heap	Masse	Ammasso ; mucchio	Monton	Montão
Hearse	Corbillard	Carro fúnebre	Féretro	Tumba
Heart	Cœur	Cuore	Corazon	Coração
Hearth	Foyer	Focolare	Hogar	Lar
Heat	Chaleur	Calore ; caldo	Calor	Calor
Heaven	Ciel	Cielo	Cielo	Céo
Heaviness	Pesanteur	Peso	Peso	Peso
Hedge	Haie	Siepe	Seto	Sebe
Heel	Talon	Calcagno	Talon	Calcanhar
Height	Hauteur	Altezza	Altura	Altura
Heir	Héritier	Erede	Heredero	Herdeiro
Hell	Enfer	Inferno	Infierno	Inferno
Helm	Gouvernail; timon	Timone	Timon	Elmo
Help	Secours	Ajuto ; soccorso	Ayuda	Ajuda
Hemp	Chanvre	Cánapa	Cáñamo	Cánamo
Hen	Pouille ; femelle	Gallina	Gallina	Gallinha
Herb	Herbe	Erba	Yerba	Herva
Hill	Colline	Collina	Colina	Monte
Hinge	Gond ; pivot	Arpione ; gánghero	Bisagra	Misagra
Hip	Hanche	Anca	Cadera	Quadril
Hire	Louage	Affitto	Alquiler	Aluguel
Hiss	Sifflet	Fischio ; síbilo	Silbido	Assobio
Hit	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Hive	Ruche	Alveare	Colmena	Colméa
Hoax	Canard	Beffa	Burla	Burla
Hole	Trou	Buco	Agujero	Buraco
Holiday	Fête ; vacances (pl.)	Festa ; vacanza	Dia de fiesta	Dia santo

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Home	Logis; chez soi; pays	Casa; pátria	Casa; patria	Casa; patria
Honey	Miel	Miele	Miel	Mel
Hood	Capuchon	Cuffia; cappuccio	Capucha	Capello
Horn	Corne	Corno	Cuerno	Corno
Horse	Cheval	Cavallo	Caballo	Cavallo
Host	Hôte	Óspite	Huesped	Patrão
Hotel	Hôtel	Locanda	Posada	Estalagem
Hour	Heure	Ora	Hora	Hora
House	Maison	Casa	Casa	Casa
Hunting	Chasse	Caccia	Caza	Caça
Hurdle	Fascine	Graticcio	Zarzo	Clausura
Hurry	Hâte	Fretta	Priesa	Pressa
Hurt	Mal	Male	Mal	Mal
Husband	Mari	Marito	Marido	Marido
Ice	Glace	Ghiaccio	Hielo	Gelo
Idea	Idée	Idea	Idea	Idea
Idleness	Oisiveté	Ozio	Pereza	Ociosidade
Ill	Mal; malheur	Male	Mal	Maldade
Image	Image	Immáginé	Imagen	Imagem
Importation	Importation	Importazione	Importacion	Importação
Improvement	Amélioration	Miglioramento	Mejoria	Melhoramento
Incense	Encens	Incenso	Incienso	Incenso
Inch	Pouce	Dito	Pulgada	Pollegada
Income	Revenu	Réndita	Renta	Renda
Increase	Augmentation	Aumento	Aumento	Augmento
Individual	Individu	Individuo	Individuo	Individuo
Infant	Enfant	Infante	Infante	Infante
Ingot	Lingot	Verga	Barra	Barra
Injury	Injure; blessure	Ingiuria; danno	Daño	Injuria
Ink	Encre	Inchiostro	Tinta	Tinta
Inkstand	Encrier	Calamajo	Tintero	Tinteiro

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Inn	Auberge	Albergo	Posada	Estalagem
Inquiry	Demande; enquête	Domanda	Pesquisa	Inquirição
Insect	Insecte	Insetto	Insecto	Insecto
Insolvent	Débiteur; insolvable	Insolvente	Insolvente	Quebrado
Insult	Insulte	Insulto	Insulto	Insulto
Insurance	Assurance	Assicurazione	Seguro	Seguro
Interference	Intervention	Intervenzione	Intervencion	Interposição
Interruption	Interruption	Interruzione	Interrupcion	Interrupção
Inundation	Inondation	Inondazione	Inundacion	Inundação
Invalid	Invalide	Infermo	Invalido	Invalido
Investment	Investiture; placement	Investitura; investita	Vestidura; inversion	Investidura
Iron	Fer	Ferro	Hierro	Ferro
Island	Île	Îsola	Isla	Ilha
Issue	Issue; émission	Uscita	Salida	Sahida
Ivory	Ivoire	Avorio	Marfil	Marfim
Ivy	Lierre	Édera; éllera	Hiedra	Hera
Jackal	Chacal	Jacal	Adiva	Chacal
Jam	Confiture	Conserva	Conserva	Conserva
January	Janvier	Jennajo	Enero	Janeiro
Jar	Jarre	Giara	Jarra	Jarro
Jasmin	Jasmin	Gelsomino	Jazmin	Jasmim
Jaw	Mâchoire	Mascella	Quijada	Queixada
Jealousy	Jalousie	Gelosia	Zelos	Ciume
Jelly	Gelée	Gelatina	Gelatina	Gelea
Jest	Bon mot; plaisanterie	Burla; scherzo	Burla	Burla
Jet	Jais	Ambra nera	Azabache	Azeviche
Jew	Juif (juive, f.)	Ebreo	Judio	Judeo
Jewel	Joyau; bijou	Gioja; giojello	Joya	Joia
Joint	Jointure	Giuntura	Coyuntura	Junta
Joke	Plaisanterie	Scherzo	Burla	Burla
Journal	Journal	Giornale	Diario	Jornal

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Journey	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Jornada
Judge	Juge	Giudice	Juez	Juiz
Jug	Cruche	Boccale	Jarro	Caneca
Juice	Jus	Sugo	Zumo	Succo
July	Juillet	Luglio	Julio	Salto
Jump	Saut	Salto	Salto	Salto
June	Juin	Giugno	Junio	Junho
Junior	Jeune ; cadet	Cadetto	Menor	Menor
Jury	Jury	Giuri	Jurado	Jurados
Juryman	Juré	Giurato	Juror	Juror
Keel	Quille ; carêne	Carena	Quilla	Quilha
Keeper	Garde ; gardien	Guardiano	Guarda	Guarda
Keepsake	Souvenir	Ricordo	Regalo	Regalo
Kennel	Chenil	Canile	Perrera	Casa de Cães
Kernel	Grain ; glande	Grano ; glandolo	Meollo ; pepita	Miollo
Kettle	Chaudière	Caldaja	Caldera	Caldeira
Key	Clef	Chiave	Llave	Chave
Kick	Coup de pied	Calcio	Patada ; coz	Couce
Kid	Chevreau	Capretto	Cabruto	Cabruto
Kidney	Rognon	Rognone	Riñon	Rim
Kind	Espèce ; sorte	Specie ; razza	Especie	Especie
King	Roi	Re	Rey	Rei
Kingdom	Royaume	Regno	Reino	Reino
Kiss	Baiser	Bacio	Beso	Beijo
Knave	Coquin ; valet (at cards)	Birbante ; fante (at cards)	Pícaro ; sota (at cards)	Velhaco ; valete (at cards)
Knee	Genou	Ginocchio	Rodillo	Joelho
Knife	Couteau ; canif (pen)	Coltello ; temperino (pen)	Cuchillo ; cortaplumas (pen)	Faca ; canivete (pen)
Knight	Chevalier	Cavaliere	Caballero	Cavalleiro
Knob	Bosse ; bouton	Bozza ; nodo	Bulto	Nó
Knock	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Pancada
Knot	Nœud	Nodo	Nudo	Nó



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Label	Étiquette	Etichetta	Esquela	Letreiro
Labour	Travail	Lavoro	Trabajo	Trabalho
Lace	Dentelle	Gallone	Encaje	Passamane
Lady	Dame	Dama ; signora	Dama ; señora	Senhora
Lake	Lac	Lago	Lago	Lago
Lamb	Agneau	Agnello	Cordeiro	Cordeiro
Lamp	Lampe	Lampione	Lámpara	Lampada
Land	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Landing	Débarcadère	Sbarco	Desembarcadero	Desembarçadouro
Landlord	Hôte ; propriétaire	Padrone	Patron	Proprietario
Landscape	Paysage	Paesaggio	Paisaje	Paizagem
Lane	Haie ; ruelle	Vicolo	Callejuela	Beco
Language	Langue	Lingua	Lengua	Lingua
Lantern	Lanterne	Lanterna	Linterna	Lanterna
Lark	Alouette	Allódola	Alondra	Calhandra
Lash	Méche	Sferza	Trailla	Açoute
Last	Dernier ; fin	Fine	Ultimo	Último
Latch	Loquet	Saliscendo	Aldaba	Aldrava
Lath	Latte	Panconcello	Lata	Ripa
Laughter	Rire	Riso	Risa	Risadas
Laundress	Blanchisseuse	Lavandaja	Lavandera	Lavandeira
Laurel	Laurier	Lauro	Laurel	Loureiro
Lavender	Lavande	Lavanda	Lavandula	Alfazema
Law	Loi	Legge	Ley	Lei
Lead	Plomb	Piombo	Plomo	Chumbo
Leader	Chef ; conducteur	Capo ; conduttore	Jefe ; conductor	Guia ; conductor
Leaf	Feuille	Foglio	Hoja	Folha
Leap	Saut	Salto	Salto	Salto
Lcase	Terme	Pólizza d'affitto	Arriendo	Arrendamento
Leather	Cuir ; peau	Cujo	Cuero	Coiro
Leave	Permission	Permesso	Permiso	Permissão
Ledger	Grand livre	Libro maestro	Libro mayor	Livro mestre

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Leg	Jambe	Gamba	Pierna	Perna
Legacy	Legs	Legato	Legado	Legado
Leisure	Loisir	Agio	Comodidad	Descanso
Length	Longueur	Lunghezza	Largura	Comprimento
Lentil	Lentille	Lenticchia	Lenteja	Lentilha
Lesson	Leçon	Lezione	Leccion	Lição
Letter	Lettre	Lettera	Carta	Carta
Level	Niveau	Livello	Nivel	Nivel
Lever	Levier	Leva	Palanca	Alavanca
Liability	Responsabilité	Risponsabilità	Responsabilidad	Responsabilidade
Libel	Diffamation	Libello	Libelo	Libello
Library	Bibliothèque	Libreria	Libreria	Livraria
Licorice	Réglisse	Regolizia	Regaliza	Regoliz
Lie	Mensonge	Bugia	Mentira	Mentira
Life	Vie	Vita	Vida	Vida
Light	Lumière	Luce	Luz	Luz
Lightning	Éclair	Baleno	Relámpago	Relampago
Lily	Lis	Giglio	Lirio	Lirio
Limb	Membre	Membro	Miembro	Membro
Lime	Chaux	Calce	Cal	Cal
Line	Ligne	Linea ; riga	Linea	Linha
Lining	Doublure	Fódera	Forro	Forro
Linseed	Graine de lin	Seme di lino	Linaza	Linhaça
Lint	Filasse ; charpie	Filaccia	Hila	Fios
Lip	Lèvre	Labbro	Labio	Labio
Liquid	Liquide	Líquido	Líquido	Líquido
Liver	Foie	Fégato	Higado	Figado
Livery	Livrée	Livrea	Librea	Libré
Load	Charge	Carico	Carga	Carga
Loadstone	Aimant	Magnete	Iman	Iman
Loaf	Pain	Pane	Pan	Pão
Lock	Serrure	Serratura	Cerradura	Fechadura

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Lodge	Loge	Loggia	Logia	Loja
Lodger	Locataire	Pigionale	Morador	Morador
Loft	Étage ; grenier	Piano ; soffitto	Piso ; sobrado	Andar ; sobrado
Log	Poutre	Ceppo	Toza	Cepo
Look	Regard	Sguardo	Mirada	Olhar
Lump	Morceau	Pezzo	Pedazo	Pedaço
Luxury	Luxe	Lusso	Lujo	Luxo
Machine	Machine	Macchina	Maquina	Machina
Madness	Folie	Pazzia	Locura	Loucura
Magistrate	Magistrat ; juge	Giudice	Magistrado	Magistrado
Mahogany	Mahogon ; acajou	Maogani	Caoba	Páo magno
Maid	Fille ; vierge	Damigella ; vérgine	Doncella	Donzella
Mail	Malle ; courier	Valigia	Mala	Mala
Maize	Mais	Grano ; fromentone	Maiz	Maiz
Maker	Créateur ; fabricant	Creatore ; fabbricante	Criador ; fabricante	Creator ; fabricante
Man	Homme	Uomo	Hombre	Homem
Manacles (pl.)	Menottes	Manette	Manillas	Algemas
Management	Gouvernement	Direzione	Manejo	Manejo
Manager	Directeur	Direttore	Director	Director
Manger	Crèche	Mangiatoja	Pesebre	Manjadoura
Manner	Manière ; façon	Maniera	Manera	Mancira
Mantle	Manteau	Manto ; mantello	Manto ; mantilla	Manto
Manufacturer	Fabricant	Manifattore	Fabricante	Fabricante
Manure	Engrais	Letame	Abono	Estercó
Map	Carte	Carta	Mapa	Mappa
Marble	Marbre	Marmo	Marmol	Marmore
March	Marche ; Mars (month)	Marcia ; Marzo (month)	Marcha ; Marzo (month)	Marcha ; Março (month)
Margin	Bord ; marge	Márgine	Margen	Margem
Mark	Marque	Marca	Marca	Marca
Market	Marché	Mercato	Mercado	Mercado
Marriage	Mariage	Matrimonio	Matrimonio	Casamento

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Marsh	Marais	Palude	Pantano	Pantano
Marshal	Maréchal	Maresciallo	Mariscal	Marechal
Mask	Masque	Máscara	Máscara	Mascara
Mason	Maçon	Muratore	Albañil	Pedreiro
Mass	Masse	Massa	Masa ; misa	Massa ; missa
Mast	Mât	Álbero	Palo	Masto
Master	Maître	Maestro	Maestro	Mestre
Mat	Matte	Stoja	Estera	Esteira
Match	Mèche	Miccia	Mecha	Mecha
Matter	Matière ; affaire	Materia	Materia	Materia
Mattress	Matelas	Materasso	Colchon	Colchão
May	Mai	Maggio	Mayo	Maio
Mayor	Maire	Síndaco	Corregidor	Mayor
Meadow	Pré	Prato	Prado	Prado
Meal	Repas ; farine	Pasto ; farina	Comida ; harina	Comida ; farinha
Mean	Moyen	Mezzo	Medio	Meio
Meaning	Signification	Senso ; intenzione	Significacion	Significação
Measles	Rougeole	Rosolia	Sarampion	Sarampo
Measure	Mesure	Misura	Medida	Medida
Meat	Viande	Carne	Carne	Carne
Medal	Médaille	Medaglia	Medalla	Medalha
Medicine	Médecine	Medicina	Medicina	Medicina
Medlar	Nêfle	Nespola	Nispero	Nespera
Medley	Mélange	Miscuglio	Mezcla	Mistura
Meeting	Rencontre	Incontro	Encuentro	Encontro
Member	Membre	Membro	Miembro	Membro
Memory	Mémoire	Memoria	Memoria	Memoria
Merchandize	Marchandises	Mercanzia	Mercancia	Mercancia
Merchant	Négociant	Negoziante	Negociante	Negociante
Mercy	Miséricorde ; grâçe	Misericordia	Misericordia	Misericordia
Messenger	Messenger	Messaggiere	Mensajero	Mensageiro
Metal	Métal	Metallo	Metal	Metal

# VOCABULARY.

365

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Method	Manière ; ordre	Método	Método	Methodo
Mewing	Miaulement	Il miagolare	Maullar	Miar
Middle	Milieu	Mezzo	Medio	Meio
Midnight	Minuit	Mezza notte	Media noche	Meia noite
Midwife	Sage-femme	Levatrice	Partera	Parteira
Mile	Mille	Miglio	Milla	Milha
Militia	Milice	Milizia	Milicia	Milicia
Milk	Lait	Latte	Leche	Leite
Mill	Moulin	Mulino	Molino	Moinho
Mimic	Mime	Istrione	Mimo	Bufo
Mind	Esprit	Mente	Mente	Mente
Miner	Mineur	Minatore	Minero	Mineiro
Minister	Ministre	Ministro	Ministro	Ministro
Minstrel	Ménestrel	Ministrello	Ministril	Ministrel
Mint	Monnaie ; menthe (herb)	Zecca ; menta (herb)	Casa de moneda ; menta (herb)	Casa de moeda ; hortelã (herb)
Minute	Minute	Minuto	Minuto	Minuto
Mirror	Miroir ; glace	Specchio	Espejo	Espelho
Mischief	Méchanceté	Danno ; male	Daño	Damno
Miser	Avare	Avare	Avariento	Avarento
Mistress	Maitresse	Padrona	Ama	Ama
Mixture	Mélange	Mistura	Mezcla	Mescla
Mob	Foule	Plebe	Populacho	Canalha
Mockery	Moquerie	Burla	Mofa	Zombaria
Mode	Mode ; façon	Modo	Modo	Modo
Model	Modèle	Modello	Modelo	Modello
Moisture	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Moment	Moment	Momento	Momento	Momento
Monarch	Monarque	Monarca	Monarca	Monarcha
Monday	Lundi	Lunedì	Lunes	Segunda feira
Money	Argent	Moneta ; denaro	Dinero	Dinheiro
Monk	Moine	Mónaco	Monje	Monge

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Monkey	Singe	Scimia	Mono	Macaco
Monopoly	Monopole	Monopolio	Monopolio	Monopolio
Month	Mois	Mese	Mes	Mez
Moon	Lune	Luna	Lua	Lua
Moor	Maure ; lande	Moro ; landa	Moro ; pantano	Mouro ; pantano
Mop	Balais	Retazza	Aljofifa	Lambaz
Morning	Matin	Mattino	Mañana	Manhãa
Morocco	Maroquin	Marrocchino	Marroquí	Marroquim
Morsel	Morceau	Boccone	Bocado	Bocado
Mortgage	Hypothèque	Ipoteca	Hipoteca	Hipoteca
Moss	Mousse	Musco	Musgo	Musgo
Mother	Mère	Madre	Madre	Mãi
Mountain	Montagne	Montagna	Montaña	Montanha
Mountaineer	Montagnard	Montanaro	Montañas	Montanhez
Mountebank	Charlatan	Ciarlatano	Charlatan	Charlatão
Mourning	Deuil	Lutto	Luto	Luto
Mouse	Souris	Sorcio	Raton	Rato
Mouth	Bouche	Bocca	Boca	Bocca
Mud	Boue ; fange	Fango	Fango	Lama
Muff	Manchon	Manicotto	Manguito	Regalo
Mulberry	Mûre	Mora	Mora	Amora
Mule	Mulet ; mule	Mulo	Mulo	Mula
Murder	Meurtre	Omicidio	Asesinato	Assassinio
Muscle	Muscle	Múscolo	Músculo	Musculo
Museum	Musée	Museo	Museo	Museo
Mushroom	Champignon	Fungo	Hongo	Fungo
Music	Musique	Musica	Musica	Musica
Musk	Musc	Muschio	Musco	Almiscar
Musket	Fusil	Schioppo	Mosquete	Mosquete
Muslin	Mousseline	Mussolina	Muselina	Musselina
Mustard	Moutarde	Mostarda	Mostaza	Mostarda
Mutton	Mouton	Castrato	Carnero	Carneiro

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Muzzle	Museau	Bocca ; muso	Boca	Bocca
Mystery	Mystère	Mistero	Misterio	Mysterio
Nail	Ongle ; clou	Unghia ; chiodo	Uña ; clavo	Unha ; cravo
Nakedness	Nudité	Nudità	Desnudez	Nudez
Name	Nom	Nome	Nombre	Nome
Narrowness	Étroitesse	Strettezza	Estrechez	Estreiteza
Native	Natif ; naturel	Nativo ; naturale	Natural	Natural
Nativity	Naissance	Natività	Nacimiento	Natividade
Navy	Marine	Marina	Marina	Marinha
Neatness	Propreté	Pulitezza	Aseo	Aceio
Neck	Cou	Collo	Cuello	Pescoço
Necklace	Collier	Collana	Collar	Collar
Need	Besoin	Bisogno	Necesidad	Necessidade
Needle	Aiguille	Ago	Aguja	Agulha
Negro	Nègre	Negro ; nero	Negro	Negro
Neigh	Hennisement	Nitrito	Relincho	Rincho
Neighbour	Voisin	Vicino	Vecino	Vizinho
Neighbourhood	Voisinage	Vicinanza	Vecindad	Vizinhança
Nerve	Nerf	Nervo	Nervio	Nervo
Net	Filet	Rete	Red	Rede
News	Nouvelles	Notizia	Noticia	Novidades
Newspaper	Journal	Giornale	Gaceta	Gazeta
Nicety	Finesse	Esaltezza	Exactitud	Exacção
Night	Nuit	Notte	Noche	Noite
Nobility	Noblesse	Nobiltà	Nobleza	Nobreza
Nobleman	Noble ; gentilhomme	Nobile	Noble	Nobre
Nod	Salut	Segno	Cabeceo	Aceno
Noise	Bruit	Strepito	Ruido	Bulha
Noon	Midi	Mezzodi	Mediodia	Meio dia
Noose	Nœud coulant	Laccio	Lazo	Laço
North	Nord	Nord ; norte	Norte	Norte

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Nose	Nez	Naso	Nariz	Nariz
Nosegay	Bouquet	Mazzetto	Ramillete	Ramalhete
Notary	Notaire	Notajo	Notario	Notario
Note	Note ; billet	Nota	Nota	Nota
Notice	Observation ; avis	Notizia	Noticia	Noticia
Notion	Idée	Idea	Idea	Idea
Novel	Roman	Romanzo	Novela	Novella
Novelist	Romancier	Novellista	Novelador	Novelista
Novelty	Nouveauté	Novità	Novedad	Novidade
November	Novembre	Novembre	Noviembre	Novembro
Nuisance	Incommodité	Incomodo ; seccatura	Molestia	Descommodo
Number	Nombre ; numéro	Numero	Numero	Numero
Nun	Nonne ; religieuse	Mónaca	Monja	Freira
Nurse	Nourrice ; bonne	Nutrice	Ama	Ama
Nut	Noix ; noisette	Noce	Nuez	Noz
Nut-crackers	Casse-noisette	Acciaccanoci	Cascanueces	Quebra-nozes
Nutmeg	Muscade	Noce moscada	Nuez Moscada	Noz moscada
Oak	Chêne	Quercia	Encina	Carvalho
Oar	Rame	Remo	Remo	Remo
Oat	Avoine	Avena	Avena	Avêa
Oath	Serment	Giuramento	Juramento	Juramento
Object	Objet	Oggetto	Objeto	Objecto
Objection	Objection	Obbiezione	Objecion	Objecção
Oblivion	Oubli	Obblio	Olvido	Esquecimento
Obstacle	Obstacle	Ostácolo	Obstaculo	Obstaculo
Obstinacy	Opiniâtrété	Ostinazione	Obstinacion	Obstinação
Occasion	Occasion	Occasione	Occasion	Occasião
Occupant	Possesseur	Occupante	Ocupante	Possessor
October	Octobre	Ottobre	Octubre	Outubro
Oculist	Oculiste	Oculista	Oculista	Oculista
Odour	Odeur ; parfum	Odore	Olor	Odor



## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Offence	Offense ; injure	Offesa ; ingiuria	Ofensa	Ofensa
Offer	Offre	Offerta	Oferta	Offerta
Office	Charge ; bureau	Ufficio ; banco	Oficio ; oficina	Ofício ; secretaria
Officer	Officier	Ufficiale	Oficial	Official
Oil	Huile	Olio	Aceite	Azeite
Ointment	Onguent	Unguento	Ungüento	Unguento
Oldness	Vieillesse	Vecchiezza	Vejez	Velhice
Olive	Olive	Oliva	Oliva	Azeitona
Omen	Augure	Augurio	Agüero	Agouro
Omittance	Omission	Omissione	Omisión	Omissão
Onion	Ognon	Cipolla	Cebolla	Cebola
Opal	Opale	Opale	Opalo	Opala
Opening	Ouverture	Apertura	Abertura	Abertura
Opera-glass	Lorgnette	Occhialino	Anteajo	Luneta
Opponent	Adversaire	Avversario	Antagonista	Oppoente
Optician	Opticien	Óttico	Optico	Optico
Orange	Orange	Arancia	Naranja	Laranja
Orator	Orateur	Oratore	Orador	Orador
Orchard	Verger	Verziere	Huerto	Pomar
Orchestra	Orchestre	Orchestra	Orquestra	Orchestra
Order	Ordre ; mandat	Ordine	Orden	Ordem
Organ	Organe	Organo	Organo	Orgão
Origin	Origine	Origine	Origen	Origem
Ornament	Ornement	Ornamento	Ornamento	Ornamento
Orphan	Orphelin	Órfano	Huérfano	Orphão
Otter	Loutre	Lontra	Nutra	Lontra
Ottoman	Ottoman ; divan	Ottomana	Otomano	Ottomano
Ounce	Once	Oncia	Onza	Onça
Outcast ; outlaw	Proscrit	Proscritto	Proscrito	Proscrito
Outrider	Piqueur	Staffiere	Batidor	Lacaio
Outset	Début	Principio	Principio	Principio
Outside	Dehors ; extérieur	Esteriore	Exterior	Exterior

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Oven	Fournée	Forno	Horno	Forno
Overflowing	Débordement	Inondazione	Inundacion	Inundação
Overlooker	Inspecteur	Soprantendente	Inspector	Superintendente
Owl	Hibou	Civetta	Lechuza	Bufo
Owner	Propriétaire	Proprietario	Proprietario	Proprietario
Ox	Bœuf	Bue	Buey	Boi
Oyster	Huitre	Óstrica	Ostra	Ostra
Pace	Pas	Passo	Paso	Passo
Package	Paquet	Collo	Fardo	Fardo
Packet (boat)	Paquebot	Pacchebotto	Paquebote	Paquete
Padlock	Cadenas	Lucchetto	Candado	Cadeado
Page	Page	Paggio ; Página	Paje ; página	Pagem ; pagina
Pail	Seau	Secchia	Cubo	Balde
Pain	Peine ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Dôr
Paint	Couleur	Colore	Color	Côr
Painting	Peinture	Pittura	Pintura	Pintura
Pair	Paire	Pajo	Par	Par
Palate	Goût	Gusto	Paladar ; gusto	Paladar
Paleness	Pâleur	Pallore	Palidez	Pallidez
Palm	Paume ; palmier (tree)	Palma	Palma	Palma
Pamphlet	Brochure	Opúscolo	Folleto	Folheto
Panel	Panneau	Quadrello	Tablero	Almofada
Panic	Panique	Pánico	Pánico	Panico
Pannier	Panier	Paniere ; cesta	Cesto	Cesto
Pantry	Office	Dispensa	Dispensa	Dispensa
Paper	Papier	Carta	Papel	Papel
Parade	Parade	Parata	Parada	Parada
Paradise	Paradis	Paradiso	Paraiso	Paraiso
Parallel	Parallèle	Parallelo	Paralelo	Paralelo
Parcel	Paquet	Pacchetto	Paquete	Envoltorio
Parchment	Parchemin	Pergamena	Pergamino	Pergaminho

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pardon	Pardon	Perdono	Perdon	Perdão
Park	Parc	Parco	Parque	Parque
Parliament	Parlement	Parlamento	Parlamento	Parlamento
Parlour	Parloir	Salotto	Sala	Sala
Parsley	Persil	Petrosello	Perejil	Perrexil
Parson	Curé	Curato	Cura	Cura
Part	Partie	Parte	Parte	Parte
Parting	Séparation	Separazione	Separacion	Separacão
Partition	Division	Divisione	Division	Divisão
Partner	Associé	Socio	Socio	Socio
Party	Parti	Parte	Parte	Parte
Passage	Passage	Passaggio	Pasaje	Passagem
Passenger	Passager	Passaggiere	Pasajero	Passageiro
Passport	Passe-port	Passaporto	Pasaporte	Passaporte
Passion	Passion ; colère	Passione	Pasion	Paixão
Pasteboard	Carton	Cartone	Carton	Papelão
Pastry	Pâtisserie	Pasticceria	Pasteleria	Pasteleria
Pasture	Pâtûre ; pâturage	Pastura	Pastura	Pasto
Pasty	Pâté	Pasticcio	Pastel	Pastel
Patent	Brevet	Patente	Patente	Patente
Path	Sentier	Sentiero	Senda	Passagem
Patten	Patin	Zoccolo	Galocha	Chapim
Pattern	Modèle ; échantillon	Modello	Modelo	Modelo
Pause	Pause	Pausa	Pausa	Pausa
Pavement	Pavé	Lástrico	Pavimento	Calçada
Paw	Patte	Zampa	Garra	Garra
Pawn	Gage ; pion	Pegno ; pedina	Prenda ; peon	Penhor ; pião
Pay	Paye ; solde	Paga ; soldo	Paga ; sueldo	Paga ; soldo
Payment	Payement	Pagamento	Pagamento	Pagamento
Pea	Pois	Pisello	Guisante	Ervilha
Peace	Paix	Pace	Paz	Paz
Peach	Pêche	Pesco	Melocoton	Pecego

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Peacock	Paon	Pavone	Pavon	Pavão
Peal	Coup	Rumore	Estruendo	Estrondo
Pear	Poire	Pera	Pera	Pera
Pearl	Perle	Perla	Perla	Perola
Peasant	Paysan	Contadino	Aldeano	Camponez
Pebble	Caillou	Selce	Guijarro	Seixo
Pedal	Pédale	Pedale	Pedal	Pedal
Pedlar	Colporteur	Merciajuolo	Buhonero	Bofarinheiro
Peel	Écorce	Scorza	Cáscara	Casca
Peer	Pair	Pari	Par	Par
Peg	Cheville	Caviglia	Clavija	Cavilha
Pen	Plume	Penna	Pluma	Penna
Pencil	Crayon	Lapis	Lapiz	Lapiz
People	Gens	Gente	Gente	Gente
Pepper	Poivre	Pepe	Pimienta	Pimenta
Perch	Perche	Pértica	Pértica	Perca
Perfume	Parfum	Profumo	Perfume	Perfume
Period	Période	Periodo	Periodo	Periodo
Perjury	Parjure	Spergiuro	Perjurio	Perjurio
Persian	Perse	Persiano	Persiano	Persiano
Person	Personne	Persona	Persona	Pessoa
Perusal	Lecture	Lettura	Lectura	O ler
Pest	Peste	Peste	Peste	Peste
Pestle	Pilon	Pestello	Majadero	Mão do gral
Pet	Favori	Favorito	Favorito	Favorito
Petition	Pétition ; prière	Petizione	Peticion	Petição
Picture	Tableau	Pittura	Pintura	Pintura
Pie	Pâte ; tourte	Pasticcio	Pastel	Pastelão
Piece	Morceau	Pezzo	Pedazo	Pedaço
Pier	Jetée	Molo	Muelle	Molhe
Pig	Cochon	Porcello	Puerco	Leitão
Pigeon	Pigeon	Piccione	Pichon	Pombo

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pike	Pique	Picca	Pica	Pique
Pile	Tas ; amas	Mucchio	Monton	Montão
Pilgrim	Pélerin	Pellegrino	Peregrino	Peregrino
Pill	Pilule	Pillola	Pildora	Pilula
Pillar	Colonne	Colonna	Coluna	Pilar
Pillow	Oreiller	Guanciaie	Almohada	Travessoiro
Pilot	Pilote	Piloto	Piloto	Piloto
Pin	Épingle	Spillo	Alfiler	Alfinete
Pinch	Pinçon	Pizzico	Pellizco	Belisco
Pine	Pin	Pino	Pino	Pinheiro
Pine-apple	Ananas	Ananas	Ananas	Ananas
Pipe	Pipe ; tuyau	Pippa ; tubo	Pipa ; tubo	Pipa ; tubo
Pirate	Pirate	Pirato	Pirata	Pirata
Pistol	Pistolet	Pistola	Pistola	Pistola
Pit	Fosse	Fossa	Hoyo	Cova
Pitch	Poix	Catrame	Pez	Pez
Pitcher	Cruche	Brocca	Cántaro	Cántaro
Pith	Moelle	Midollo	Meollo	Medulla
Pity	Pitié	Pietà	Piedad	Piedade
Placard	Affiche	Affisso	Placarte	Cartaz
Place	Place	Luogo	Lugar	Lugar
Plait	Pli	Piega	Pliegue	Prega
Plan	Plan ; projet	Progetto	Plan	Projecto
Plane	Plane ; rabot	Piano	Plano	Plano
Planet	Planète	Pianeta	Planeta	Planeta
Plank	Planche	Tavolone	Tablon	Prancha
Plant	Plante	Pianta	Planta	Planta
Plate	Assiette	Piastra ; piatto	Plato	Prato
Platform	Plate-forme	Platea	Plataforma	Plataforma
Play	Jeu	Giucoco	Juego	Jogo
Player	Joueur	Giucatore	Jugador	Jogador
Plea	Excuse ; défense	Causa ; difesa	Alegacion	Pleito

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pleader	Plaideur	Avvocato	Abogado	Advogado
Pleasure	Plaisir	Piacere	Placer	Prazer
Pledge	Gage	Pegno	Prenda	Prenda
Plot	Plan ; intrigue	Trama	Trama	Enredo
Plough	Charrue	Aratro	Arado	Arado
Plug	Tampon	Piuolo	Tapon	Tapulho
Plum	Prune	Prugna	Ciruella	Ameixa
Plumber	Plombier	Piombajo	Plomero	Chumbeiro
Plummet	Plomb	Piombo	Plomada	Prumo
Pocket	Poche	Tasca	Faltriquera	Algibeira
Poem	Poème	Poema	Poema	Poema
Poetry	Poésie	Poesia	Poesia	Poesia
Point	Point	Punta	Punta	Ponto
Pointer (dog)	Chien d'arrêt	Cane da fermo	Perro de punta	Cão perdigueiro
Poison	Poison	Veleno	Veneno	Veneno
Poker	Tisonnier	Attizzatojo	Hurgon	Ferro de atçar
Pole	Bâton	Palo	Palo	Pao
Police	Police	Pólizza	Póliza	Apolice
Pomatum	Pommade	Pomata	Pomada	Pomada
Pomegranate	Grenade	Melagranata	Granada	Romeira
Pond	Étang	Stagno	Estanque	Tanque
Pope	Pape	Pápa	Papa	Papa
Porcelain	Porcelaine	Porcellana	Porcelana	Porcelana
Porch	Portique	Pórtico	Pórtico	Alpendre
Porcupine	Porc-épic	Porco spino	Puerco espin	Porco espinho
Pork	Porc	Carne de porco	Tocino	Carne de porco
Port	Port	Porto	Puerto	Porto
Porter	Porteur	Facchino	Portero	Porteiro
Portrait	Portrait	Ritratto	Retrato	Retrato
Post	Poste ; courier	Posto ; corriere	Puesto ; posta	Posto ; posta
Postage	Port de lettre	Porto di lettere	Porte de carta	Porte de cartas
Posture	Pose ; position	Postura	Postura	Postura

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pot	Pot	Vaso	Marmita	Pote
Potato	Pomme de terre	Patata	Patata	Batata
Poultice	Cataplasme	Cataplasma	Cataplasma	Cataplasma
Pound	Livre	Libbra	Libra	Libra
Powder	Poudre	Polvere	Polvo	Polvora
Power	Pouvoir	Potere	Poder	Poder
Practice	Pratique	Prática	Practica	Practica
Praise	Louange	Lode	Alabanza	Louvor
Prayer	Prière	Preghiera	Oracion	Oração
Preacher	Prédicateur	Predicatore	Predicador	Pregador
Preface	Préface	Prefazio	Prefacio	Prefacio
Prejudice	Prévention	Pregiudizio	Prevencion	Prejuizo
Preserve	Confiture	Conserva	Conserva	Conserva
Pretence	Prétexle	Pretesto	Pretexto	Pretexto
Prey	Proie	Preda	Presa	Presa
Price	Prix	Prezzo	Precio	Preço
Prick	Piqure	Puntura	Punzon	Picado
Pride	Orgueil	Orgoglio	Orgullo	Orgulho
Priest	Prêtre	Prete	Sacerdote	Sacerdote
Prince	Prince	Príncipe	Príncipe	Principe
Print	Impression	Stampa	Impresion	Estampa
Printer	Imprimeur	Stampatore	Impresor	Impressor
Prison	Prison	Prigione	Prision	Prisão
Privateer	Corsair	Corsale	Corsario	Corsario
Prize	Prix	Premio	Premio	Premio
Proceeding	Procédure	Procedimento	Procedimiento	Procedimento
Procession	Procession	Processione	Procesion	Procissão
Prodigy	Prodige	Prodigio	Prodigio	Prodigio
Produce	Produit	Prodotto	Producto	Producto
Professor	Professeur	Professore	Profesor	Professor
Profit	Profit	Profitto	Provecho	Proveito
Progeny	Postérité	Progenie	Progenie	Progenie

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Programme	Programme	Programma	Programa	Programma
Progress	Progrès	Progresso	Progreso	Progresso
Project	Projet	Progetto	Proyecto	Projecto
Promise	Promesse	Promessa	Promesa	Promessa
Prong	Fourche	Forca	Horca	Forcado
Pronunciation	Prononciation	Pronunzia	Pronunciacion	Pronunciação
Proof	Preuve	Prova	Prueba	Prova
Prop	Étai; appui	Sostegno	Apoyo	Apoyo
Property	Propriété	Proprietà	Propiedad	Propriedade
Prophecy	Prophétie	Profezia	Profecia	Prophecia
Prophet	Prophète	Profeta	Profeta	Propheta
Proposal	Proposition	Proposta	Propuesta	Proposta
Prose	Prose	Prosa	Prosa	Prosa
Prospect	Vue	Prospetto	Vista	Vista
Protest	Protêt	Protesto	Protesto	Protesto
Proverb	Proverbe	Proverbio	Proverbio	Proverbio
Province	Province; département	Provincia	Provincia	Provincia
Proxy	Procuration	Procura	Procuracion	Procuração
Public	Publique	Pubblico	Publico	Publico
Publican	Aubergiste	Ostiere	Mesonero	Taverneiro
Publisher	Éditeur	Publicatore	Publicador	Publicador
Pudding	Pouding	Podingo	Pudingo	Pudim
Pull	Secousse	Tirata	Tiron	Sacão
Pulley	Poulie	Girella	Polea	Polé
Pulpit	Chaire	Pulpito	Pulpito	Pulpito
Pulse	Pouls	Polso	Pulso	Pulso
Pump	Pompe	Pompa	Bomba	Bomba
Pun	Calembour	Scherzo di parole	Equivoco	Equivoco
Punch	Punch	Ponce	Ponche	Ponche
Punctuality	Ponctualité	Puntualità	Puntualidad	Pontualidade
Punishment	Punition	Punizione	Castigo	Punição
Pupil	Élève	Pupilo	Pupilo	Pupilo



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Purchase	Achat	Compra	Compra	Compra
Purple	Pourpre	Porporino	Purpurino	Purpura
Purpose	But ; dessein	Proposito	Intencion	Intento
Purse	Bourse	Borsa	Bolsa	Bolsa
Push	Impulsion	Spinta	Impulsion	Impulso
Puzzle	Embarras	Imbarazzo	Embarazo	Embaraço
Pyramid	Pyramide	Pirámide	Pirámide	Pyramide
Quack	Charlatan	Ciarlatano	Charlatan	Charlatão
Quail	Caille	Quaglia	Codorniz	Codorniz
Quality	Qualité	Qualità	Calidad	Qualidade
Quarrel	Querelle	Disputa	Disputa	Disputa
Quarry	Carrière	Cava	Cantera	Pedreira
Quarter	Quart	Quarto	Cuarto	Quarto
Queen	Reine	Regina	Reina	Rainha
Question	Question ; demande	Questione	Cuestion	Questão
Quickness	Vitesse	Rapidità	Presteza	Viveza
Quiet	Tranquillité	Quiete	Tranquilidad	Descanso
Quill	Plume	Penna	Pluma	Penna
Quilt	Couvre-pied	Coltre	Colcha	Colcha
Quince	Coing	Cotogna	Membrillo	Marmelo
Quinsy	Esquinancie	Squinanzia	Angina	Esquinencia
Quire	Chœur	Coro	Coro	Côro
Quits	Quitte	Pari	En paz	Pagos
Quiver	Carquois	Faretra	Carcaj	Aljava
Quoit	Palet	Disco	Tejo	Disco
Quotation	Citation	Citazione	Citacion	Citação
Rabbit	Lapin	Coniglio	Conejo	Coelho
Race	Race ; course	Razza	Raza	Raça
Rag	Chiffon	Cencio	Trapo	Trapo
Rage	Rage ; fureur	Rabbia	Rabia	Raiva

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Rail	Barre; grille	Stecato	Baranda	Grade
Railroad	Chemin de fer	Strada di ferro	Ferro carril	Estrada de ferro
Rain	Pluie	Pioggia	Lluvia	Chuva
Raisin	Raisin sec	Uva passa	Pasa	Passa de uva
Ramrod	Baguette	Bacchetta da schioppo	Baqueta	Vareta
Random	Hasard	Caso	Ventura	Acaso
Rank	Rang	Grado	Grado	Grao
Rascal	Coquin	Briccone	Pícaro	Velhaco
Raspberry	Framboise	Lampone	Frambuesa	Frambesia
Rat	Rat	Ratto; sorcio	Rata	Rato
Rate	Taux	Rata	Razon	Razão
Raven	Corbeau	Corvo	Cuervo	Corvo
Rawness	Crudité	Crudezza	Crudeza	Crueza
Ray	Rayon	Raggio	Rayo	Raio
Razor	Rasoir	Rasojo	Navaja	Navalha
Reading	Lecture	Lettura	Leccion	Leitura
Reaping	Moisson	Raccolta	Cosecha	Sega
Rear	Arrière	Di dietro	Retaguardia	Retaguarda
Reason	Raison	Ragione	Razon	Razão
Rebel	Rebelle	Ribello	Rebelde	Rebelde
Rebuke	Réprimande	Rimprovero	Repression	Repreensão
Receipt	Réception; quittance	Ricevuta	Recibo	Recibo
Recess	Alcòve	Alcova	Retiro	Recesso
Reckoning	Compte	Cálculo	Cuenta	Conta
Recognition	Reconnaissance	Ricognizione	Reconocimiento	Reconhecimento
Recollection	Souvenir	Rimembranza	Recuerdo	Lembrança
Recompense	Compensation	Ricompensa	Recompensa	Recompensa
Record	Registre	Registro	Registro	Registro
Recovery	Guérison	Guarigione	Restablecimiento	Convalescença
Recruit	Recrue	Recluta; conscritto	Recluta	Recruta
Red	Rouge	Rosso	Rojo	Vermelho
Reed	Roseau	Canna	Caña	Canna

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Reference	Renseignement	Riferenza	Referencia	Informação
Refining	Raffinage	Il raffinare	Refinadura	Refinamento
Refreshment	Refrachissement	Rinfresco	Refresco	Refresco
Refusal	Refus	Rifiuto	Negativa	Repulsa
Regiment	Régiment	Reggimento	Regimiento	Regimento
Region	Région	Regione	Region	Região
Register	Registre	Registro	Registro	Registro
Regret	Regret	Rincrescimento	Arrepentimiento	Pezar
Rehearsal	Récitation	Recitazione	Recitacion	Repetição
Reimbursement	Remboursement	Rimborso	Reembolso	Reembolso
Reins	Guides	Rédine	Rienda	Redeas
Relapse	Rechute	Ricaduta	Recaida	Recahida
Relations	Parents	Parenti	Pariantes	Parentes
Release	Relâchement	Liberazione	Soltura	Soltura
Reliance	Confiance	Confidenza	Confianza	Confiança
Relief	Soulagement	Sollievo	Alivio	Allivio
Relish	Goût	Gusto	Gusto	Gosto
Reluctance	Répugnance	Ripugnanza	Repugnancia	Repugnancia
Remainder	Reste	Resto	Resto	Resto
Remark	Remarque	Osservazione	Observacion	Observação
Remedy	Remède	Rimedio	Remedio	Remedio
Remittance	Remise	Rimessa	Remesa	Remessa
Removal	Déménagement	Cangiamento di luogo	Remocion	Mudança
Renewal	Renouvellement	Rinovamento	Renovacion	Renovação
Renown	Renommée	Fama	Fama	Fama
Rent	Rente	Réndita	Renta	Renda
Repair	Réparation	Riparazione	Reparacion	Reparação
Reply	Réponse	Risposta	Replica	Replica
Report	Rapport	Rapporto	Relacion	Relação
Repose	Repos	Riposo	Reposo	Repouso
Reproach	Reproche	Rimprovero	Reconvencion	Reprehensão
Repulse	Échec	Ripulsa	Repulsa	Repulsa

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Request	Requête	Richiesta	Ruego	Rogo
Rescue	Délivrance	Liberazione	Libramiento	Livramento
Resin	Résine	Resina	Resina	Resina
Respect	Respect	Rispetto	Respecto	Respeito
Rest	Reste; repos	Resto; riposo	Resto; reposo	Resto; repouso
Retail	Détail	A minuto	Al menudeo	Por miudo
Retreat	Retraite	Ritiro	Retiro	Retiro
Return	Retour	Ritorno	Retorno	Retorno
Revenge	Revanche	Vendetta	Venganza	Vingança
Revenue	Revenu	Réndita	Renta	Renda
Reverse	Revers	Rovescio	Reves	Revez
Review	Revue	Rivista	Revista	Revista
Ringlet	Boucle	Riccio	Bucle	Annel
Riot	Tumulte	Tumulto	Tumulto	Tumulto
Ripeness	Maturité	Maturità	Madurez	Madureza
Risk	Risque; péril	Rischio	Riesgo	Risco
River	Fleuve; rivière	Fiume	Rio	Rio
Road	Route; chemin	Strada	Camino	Caminho
Roar	Rugissement	Ruggite	Rugido	Rugido
Robber	Voleur	Ladro	Ladron	Ladrão
Robe	Robe	Toga; roba	Toga	Toga
Rock	Rocher	Rocca	Roca	Roca
Rod	Verge	Verga	Verga	Vara
Rogue	Coquin; fripon	Furbo	Bribon	Velhaco
Roll	Rouleau	Rótolo	Rol	Rolo
Roman	Romain	Romano	Romano	Romano
Romance	Roman	Romanzo	Romance	Romance
Roof	Toit	Tetto	Techo	Tecto
Room	Chambre	Cámara; stanza	Cuarto	Sala
Root	Racine	Radice	Raiz	Raiz
Rope	Corde	Corda	Cuerda	Corda
Rose	Rose	Rosa	Rosa	Rosa

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Roughness	Âpreté	Asprezza	Aspereza	Aspereza
Rub	Frottement	Spazzolata	Frotamiento	Fricção
Rudder	Gouvernail	Timone	Timon	Leme
Rudeness	Rudesse	Ruvidezza	Rudeza	Rudeza
Rug	Tapis	Tappeto	Tapete	Picote
Ruin	Ruine	Ruina	Ruina	Ruina
Rumour	Rumeur	Romore	Rumor	Rumor
Runner	Coureur	Corridore	Corredor	Corredor
Rush	Jonc	Giunco	Junco	Junco
Rust	Rouillure	Ruggine	Orin	Ferrugem
Sabbath	Sabbat	Sábato	Sábado	Sabbado
Sack	Sac	Sacco	Saco	Saco
Saddle	Selle	Sella	Silla	Sella
Safety	Sûreté	Sicurtà	Seguridad	Segurança
Saffron	Safran	Zafferano	Azafran	Açafrão
Sago	Sagou	Sago	Sagui	Sagú
Sail	Voile	Vela	Vela	Vela
Sailor	Marin; matelot	Marinaio	Marinero	Marinheiro
Saint	Saint	Santo	Santo	Santo
Salad	Salade	Insalata	Ensalada	Salada
Salary	Salaire	Salario	Salario	Salario
Sale	Vente	Vendita	Venta	Venda
Salmon	Saumon	Salmonè	Salmon	Salmão
Saloon	Salon	Salone	Salon	Salão
Salt	Sel	Sale	Sal	Sal
Saltpetre	Saltpêtre	Salnitro	Nitro	Nitro
Salute	Salut	Saluto	Salutacion	Saudação
Salve	Onguent	Unguento	Ungüento	Unguento
Sample.	Échantillon	Campione	Muestra	Amostra
Sand	Sable	Sabbia	Arena	Areia
Sap	Sève	Sugo	Savia	Seve

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sash	Ceinture	Cintura	Cinta	Cinta
Satin	Satin	Raso	Raso	Setim
Saturday	Samedi	Sábato	Sábado	Sabbado
Sauce	Sauce	Salsa	Salsa	Mólho
Saucer	Soucoupe	Piattino (di tazza)	Salsera	Pires
Savage	Sauvage	Selvaggio	Salvaje	Selvagem
Saving	Économia	Economia	Economia	Economia
Saviour	Sauveur	Salvatore	Salvador	Salvador
Saw	Scie	Sega	Sierra	Serra
Scabbard	Fourreau	Fódero	Vaina	Bainha
Scaffold	Échaffaud	Palco	Patibulo	Cadafalso
Scale	Échelle; écaille	Scala; scaglia	Escala	Escala
Scandal	Scandale	Scandalo	Escándalo	Escandalo
Scar	Cicatrice	Cicatrice	Cicatriz	Cicatriz
Scarf	Écharpe	Ciarpa	Banda	Manta
Scarlet	Écarlate	Scarlatto	Escarlata	Escarlata
Scate (or skate)	Patin	Pattino	Patin	Chapim
Scene	Scène	Scena	Escena	Scena
Scent	Odeur; parfum	Odore	Olor	Cheiro
Scheme	Projet	Progetto	Proyecto	Projecto
Scholar	Écolier; savant	Scolare	Estudiante	Estudante
School	École	Scuola	Escuela	Escola
Scolding	Gronderie	Il rampognare	El regañar	O renhir
Scorn	Mépris	Sdegno	Desden	Desdem
Scoundrel	Scélerat	Briccone	Bribon	Velhaco
Scout	Védette	Esploratore	Explorador	Batedor
Scraping	Grattage	Raschiatura	El raspar	O raspar
Scratch	Égratignure	Graffiatura	Rascadura	Arranhadura
Scream	Cri perçant	Grido	Grito	Grito
Screen	Écran; paravent	Parafuoco	Biombo	Anteparo

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Screw	Vis	Vite	Tornillo	Parafuso
Scripture	Écriture	Scrittura	Escritura	Escritura
Sculptor	Sculpteur	Scultore	Escultor	Escultor
Scythe	Faux	Falce	Guadaña	Fouce
Sea	Mer	Mare	Mar	Mar
Sea-sickness	Mal de mer	Mal di mare	Mareo	Enjão
Seal	Sceau	Sigillo	Sello	Sello
Search	Recherche	Ricerca	Busca	Busca
Season	Saison	Stagione	Estacion	Estação
Seat	Siège	Sedia	Asiento	Assento
Secret	Secret	Segreto	Secreto	Segredo
Secretary	Secrétaire	Segretario	Secretario	Secretario
Seed	Semence ; graine	Seme	Semilla	Semente
Selection	Choix ; recueil	Scelta	Seleccion	Seleccção
Selfishness	Égoïsme	Egoismo	Egoismo	Egoismo
Senior	Ainé	Seniore	Anciano ; senior	Ancião ; velho
Sense	Sens ; esprit	Senso	Sentido	Sentido
Sentence	Sentence	Sentenza	Sentencia	Sentença
Sentinel	Sentinelle	Sentinella	Centinela	Sentinella
September	Septembre	Settembre	Setiembre	Septembro
Sermon	Sermon	Sermone	Sermon	Sermão
Serpent	Serpent	Serpente	Serpiente	Serpente
Servant	Domestique	Servo	Criado	Criado
Service	Service	Servizio	Servicio	Serviço
Setter (dog)	Chien couchant	Cane da caccia	Perro de muestra	Perdigueiro
Settlement	Réglement	Regolamento	Acomodo	Ajuste
Sex	Sexe	Sesso	Sexo	Sexo
Shade	Ombre	Ombra	Sombra	Sombra
Shake	Secousse	Scossa	Sacudida	Abalo
Shame	Honte	Vergogna	Vergüenza	Vergonha
Shape	Forme	Forma	Forma	Forma
Share	Portion	Porzione	Porcion	Parte

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Shark	Requin	Pesce cane	Tiburón	Tubarão
Shaving	Action de raser	Il raders	El afeitár	O barbear
Sheep	Mouton	Montone	Oveja ; carnero	Carneiro
Sheet	Drap	Lenzuolo	Sábana	Lençol
Shelf	Planche	Scoglio ; banco	Estante	Estante
Shell	Coquille ; écorce	Conca	Concha	Concha
Shepherd	Berger	Pastore	Pastor	Pastor
Shield	Bouclier	Scudo	Escudo	Escudo
Ship	Navire	Bastimento	Navio	Navio
Shipwreck	Naufrage	Naufragio	Naufragio	Naufragio
Shirt	Chemise	Camicia	Camisa	Camisa
Shiver	Frisonnement	Trémite	Temblor	Tremor
Shoe	Soulier	Scarpa	Zapato	Sapato
Shop	Magasin	Bottega	Tienda	Loja
Shore	Côte ; rive	Lido	Costa	Costa
Shot	Plomb ; balle	Palla	Municion ; tiro	Chumbo ; tiro
Shoulder	Épaule	Spalla	Espalda ; hombro	Espalda ; hombro
Show	Spectacle ; parade	Spettacolo	Espectáculo	Espectaculo
Shower	Averse	Pioggia	Lluvia	Chuva
Shyness	Timidité	Timidità	Reserva	Reserva
Sickness	Maladie	Malattia	Enfermedad	Doença
Side	Côté	Fianco ; lato	Lado	Lado
Sideboard	Buffet	Buffetto	Aparador	Aparador
Sieve	Crible	Crivello	Cribo	Peneira
Sigh	Soupir	Sospiro	Suspiro	Suspiro
Sight	Vision ; vue	Vista	Vista	Vista
Sign	Signe	Segno	Signo	Signo
Signal	Signal	Segnale	Señal	Signal
Signature	Signature	Firma	Firma	Firma
Silence	Silence	Silenzio	Silencio	Silencio
Silk	Soie	Seta	Seda	Seda
Silver	Argent	Argento	Plata	Prata



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sin	Péché	Peccato	Pecado	Peccado
Singer	Chanteur	Cantatore	Cantor	Cantor
Sister	Sœur	Sorella	Hermana	Irmã
Size	Grandeur	Grandezza	Tamaño	Grandezza
Skeleton	Squelette	Schéletro	Esqueleto	Esqueleto
Skill	Adresse ; habilité	Abilità	Habilidad	Habilidade
Skin	Peau	Pelle	Piel	Pelle
Skull	Crâne	Cranio	Craneo	Craneo
Sky	Ciel	Cielo	Cielo	Céo
Slander	Calomnie	Calunnia	Calumnia	Calumnia
Slave	Esclave	Schiavo	Esclavo	Escravo
Sleep	Sommeil	Sonno	Sueño	Sono
Sleeve	Manche	Mánica	Manga	Manga
Slipper	Pantoufle	Scarpa	Chinela ; zapato	Chinela
Slowness	Lenteur	Lentezza	Lentitud	Vagar
Smell	Odeur ; parfum	Odore	Olor	Cheiro
Smile	Souris	Sorriso	Sonrisa	Sorriso
Smoke	Fumée	Fumo	Humo	Fumo
Smuggler	Contrebandier	Contrabbandiere	Contrabandista	Contrabandista
Snake	Serpent	Serpente	Serpiente	Cobra
Snipe	Bécassine	Beccaccino	Agachadiza	Narseja
Snow	Neige	Neve	Nieve	Neve
Snuff	Tabac	Tabacco	Tabaco	Tabaco
Soap	Savon	Sapone	Jabon	Sabão
Softness	Mollesse	Mollezza	Blandura	Brandura
Soldier	Soldat	Soldato	Soldado	Soldado
Sole	Plante	Pianta	Planta	Planta
Solitariness	Solitude	Solitudine	Soledad	Soledade
Son	Fils	Figlio	Hijo	Filho
Song	Chant	Canto	Cancion	Cantiga
Sore	Plaie	Piaga	Llaga	Chaga
Sorrow	Chagrin	Tristezza	Pesar	Pezar

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sort	Sorte	Sorta	Suerte	Sorte
Soul	Âme	Ânima	Alma	Alma
Sound	Son	Suono	Son	Som
Soup	Soupe	Zuppa	Sopa	Sopa
Sourness	Aigreur	Agrezza	Agrio	Acido
South	Sud	Sud	Sur	Sul
Space	Espace	Spazio	Espacio	Espaço
Spade	Bêche ; pique	Vanga ; picche	Azada ; espada	Pá ; espada
Spaniard	Espagnol	Spagnuolo	Español	Hespanhol
Spark	Étincelle	Scintilla	Chispa	Scintilla
Sparrow	Moineau	Passero	Gorrión	Pardal
Spasm	Spasme	Spasimo	Espasmo	Espasmo
Speaker	Orateur	Oratore	Orador	Orador
Spear	Lance	Lancia	Lanza	Lança
Spectacles	Lunettes	Occhiali	Anteojos	Oculos
Speed	Vitesse	Rapidità	Presteza	Pressa
Spending	Dépense	Spesa	Gasto	Gasto
Spice	Épice	Spezie	Especio	Especiaria
Spit	Broche	Spiedo	Asador	Espeto
Sponge	Éponge	Spugna	Esponja	Esponja
Spoon	Cuiller	Cucchiajo	Cuchara	Colher
Sport	Jeu ; chasse	Giuoco ; caccia	Juego ; caza	Divertimento ; caça
Spot	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Mancha
Spring	Printemps	Primavera	Primavera	Primavera
Spur	Éperon	Sprone	Espuela	Espora
Spy	Espion	Spione	Espia	Espia
Square	Place	Piazza	Plaza	Praça
Stab	Coup (de)	Pugnalata	Puñalada	Punhalada
Stable	Écurie	Stalla	Establo	Estrebaria
Stag	Cerf	Cervo	Ciervo	Veado
Stage	Échafaud ; scène	Palco	Plancha ; tablado	Estalagem ; tablado

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Stain	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Mancha
Stair	Escalier	Scala	Escalera	Escada
Stamp	Timbre	Bollo	Sello	Sello
Star	Étoile	Stella	Estrella	Estrella
Start	Tressaillement	Salto	Sobresalto	Salto
State	État	Stato	Estado	Estado
Station	Station	Stazione	Estacion	Estação
Steam	Vapeur	Vapore	Vapor	Vapor
Steel	Acier	Acciajo	Acero	Aço
Step	Pas; degré	Passo	Paso	Passo
Stick	Bâton	Bastone	Baston	Páo
Stiffness	Raideur	Rigidezza	Rigidez	Rigidez
Stillness	Calme	Calma	Calma	Tranquilidade
Sting	Piqûre	Puntura	Picadura	Ferrão
Stirrup	Étrier	Staffa	Estribo	Estribo
Stocking	Bas	Calza	Media	Meia
Stomach	Estomac	Stómaco	Estómago	Estomago
Stone	Pierre	Pietra	Piedra	Pedra
Store	Dépôt	Deposito	Almacen	Armazem
Storm	Orage	Tempesta	Tempestad	Tempestade
Story	Histoire; étage	Storia; piano	Historia; piso	Historia; andar
Stove	Étuve	Stufa	Estufa	Estufa
Straw	Paille	Paglia	Paja	Palha
Strawberry	Fraise	Frágola	Fresa	Morango
Street	Rue	Strada	Calle	Rua
Strength	Force	Forza	Fuerza	Força
String	Corde	Cordicella	Cuerda	Corda
Stroke	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Study	Étude	Studio	Estudio	Estudo
Stuff	Étoffe	Stoffa	Estofa	Estofa
Subject	Sujet	Soggetto; suddito	Sujeto	Sujeito

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Subscription	Souscription	Soscrizione	Suscripcion	Subscrição
Success	Succès	Successo	Suceso	Successo
Suet	Suif	Sugna	Sebo	Sebo
Sufferer	Victime	Vittima	Sufridor	Soffredor
Sugar	Sucre	Zucchero	Azucar	Assucar
Sulphur	Soufre	Zolfo	Azufre	Enxofre
Sum	Somme	Somma	Suma	Somma
Summer	Été	Estate	Verano	Verão
Summons	Sommatton	Citazione	Citacion	Citação
Sun	Soleil	Sole	Sol	Sol
Sunday	Dimanche	Domenica	Domingo	Domingo
Supper	Souper	Cena	Cena	Cêa
Supply	Provision	Provvisione	Provision	Provisão
Survey	Inspection	Ispezione	Inspeccion	Inspeção
Suspicion	Soupeçon	Sospetto	Sospecha	Suspeita
Swan	Cygne	Cigno	Cisne	Cisne
Sweetness	Douceur	Dolcezza	Dulzura	Doçura
Swiftness	Rapidité	Rapidità	Rapidez	Rapidez
Swimmer	Nageur	Nuotatore	Nadador	Nadador
Sword	Épée	Spada	Espada	Espada
Table	Table	Távola	Mesa	Mesa
Tail	Queue	Coda	Cola	Cauda
Tailor	Tailleur	Sarto	Sastre	Alfaiate
Tale	Histoire	Conto	Cuenta	Conto
Talk	Causerie	Discorso	Conversacion	Falla
Tallow	Suif	Sevo	Sebo	Sebo
Taste	Goût	Gusto	Gusto	Gosto
Tavern	Auberge	Albergo	Meson	Taverna
Tax	Impôt	Tassa	Impuesto	Imposto
Tea	Thé	Té	Té	Chá
Tear	Larme	Lágrima	Lágrima	Lágrima

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Temper	Humeur	Umore	Genio	Genio
Tempest	Tempête	Tempesta	Tempestad	Tempestado
Temple	Temple ; tempe	Tempio	Templo ; sien	Templo
Tenant	Locataire	Locatario	Arrendador	Rendeiro
Tenderness	Tendresse	Tenerezza	Ternura	Ternura
Tent	Pavillon	Tenda	Pabellon	Tenda
Term	Terme	Términe	Término	Termo
Terrace	Terrasse	Terrazzo	Terrado	Terraço
Testimonial	Certificat	Certificato	Certificado	Certificado
Thanks	Remerciments	Grazie	Gracias	Graças
Theatre	Théâtre ; spectacle	Teatro	Teatro	Theatro
Thickness	Épaisseur	Grossezza	Espesura	Espessura
Thief	Voleur	Ladro	Ladron	Ladrão
Thimble	Dé	Ditale	Dedal	Dedal
Thirst	Soif	Séte	Sed	Sede
Thorn	Épine	Spina	Espina	Espinho
Thought	Pensée	Pensiero	Pensamiento	Pensamento
Thread	Fil	Filo	Hilo	Fio
Threat	Menace	Minaccia	Amenaza	Ameaça
Throat	Gorge	Gola	Garganta	Garganta
Throne	Trône	Trono	Trono	Throno
Thumb	Pouce	Póllice	Pulgar	Pollegar
Thunder	Tonnerre	Tuono	Trueno	Trovão
Ticket	Billet	Biglietto	Billete	Bilhete
Tide	Courant ; flux	Marea	Marea	Maré
Tiger	Tigre	Tigre	Tigre	Tigre
Tightness	Raideur	Strettezza	Tension	Estreiteza
Tile	Tuile	Tegola	Teja	Telha
Timber	Bois	Legname	Madera	Madeira
Time	Temps ; heure	Tempo ; ora	Tiempo ; hora	Tempo ; hora
Tin	Étain ; fer-blanc	Stagno	Estaño	Estanho ; lata

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Title	Titre	Titolo	Titulo	Titulo
Toad	Crapaud	Rospo	Sapo	Sapo
Toast	Santé	Brindisi	Brindis	Brinde
Toe	Doigt	Dito del piede	Dedo del pié	Dedo do pé
Tomb	Tombeau	Tomba	Tumba	Sepultura
Ton	Tonneau	Tonnellata	Tonelada	Tonelada
Tongs	Pincettes	Mollette	Tenaza	Tenaz
Tongue	Langue	Lingua	Lengua	Lingua
Tool	Outil; instrument	Stromento	Apero	Instrumento
Tooth	Dent	Dente	Diente	Dente
Top	Sommet; dessus	Cima; il di sopra	Cima	Cima
Torch	Flambeau	Torcio	Hacha	Tocha
Touch	Touche	Tocco	Tocamiento	Tocamento
Tow	Filasse	Stoppa	Estopa	Estopa
Tower	Tour	Torre	Torre	Torre
Town	Ville	Città	Ciudad	Cidade
Toy	Jouet	Trastullo	Juguete	Brinco
Trade	Commerce	Commercio	Comercio	Commercio
Tradesman	Marchand	Mercante	Mercader	Mercador
Tragedy	Tragédie	Tragedia	Tragedia	Tragedia
Train	Train; convoi	Treno	Tren	Trem
Traitor	Traître	Traditore	Traidor	Traidor
Translation	Traduction	Traduzione	Traduccion	Traducção
Trap	Trappe	Trappola	Trampa	Trapa
Travel	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Viagem
Tray	Auge	Vassojo	Bandeja	Bandeja
Treasure	Trésor	Tesoro	Tesoro	Thesouro
Tree	Arbre	Álbero	Arbol	Arvore
Trembling	Tremblement	Tremante	Temblante	Tremulo
Trial	Essai; procès	Prova	Prueba	Prova
Tribe	Tribu	Tribù	Tribu	Tribu
Trick	Ruse	Scherzo; furberia	Engaño	Engano

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Trifle	Bagatelle	Bagatella	Bagatela	Bagatela
Triumph	Triomphe	Trionfo	Triunfo	Triunpho
Troop	Troupe	Truppa	Tropa	Tropa
Tropic	Tropique	Trópico	Tropico	Tropico
Trouble	Chagrin	Afflizione	Afficcion	Afflicção
Truce	Trêve	Tregua	Tregua	Tregoa
Trump (cards)	Atout	Trionfo	Triunfo	Trunfo
Trumpet	Trompette	Tromba	Trompeta	Trombeta
Trunk	Tronc	Tronco	Tronco	Tronco
Trust	Confiance	Fiducia	Confianza	Confiança
Trustee	Commissaire	Curatore	Curador	Curador
Tub	Cuve	Tino	Cubo	Cuba
Tube	Tube	Tubo	Tubo	Tubo
Tug	Remorqueur	Rimorchio	Remolcador	Rebocador
Tulip	Tulipe	Tulipano	Tulipa	Tulipa
Tune	Air	Aria	Aria	Aria
Tunnel	Tonnelle	Tonnello	Camino subterraneo	Caminho subterraneo
Turcen	Soupière	Zuppiera	Sopera	Sopeira
Turf	Gazon	Torba	Cesped	Relva
Turn	Tour	Giro	Vuelta	Volta
Turnip	Navet	Navone	Nabo	Nabo
Turtle	Tortue	Tartaruga	Tortuga	Tartaruga
Tusk	Canine	Sanna	Colmillo	Dente
Tutor	Gouverneur	Tutore	Tutor	Tutor
Twilight	Crépuscule	Crepusculo	Crepusculo	Crepusculo
Twin	Jumeau	Gemello	Gemelo	Gemeo
Twine	Picelle	Spago	Hilo	Fio
Tyrant	Tyran	Tiranno	Tirano	Tyranno
Ugliness	Laideur	Brutezza	Fealdad	Fealdade
Umbrella	Parapluie	Ombrello	Paraguas	Chapeo de sol
Umpire	Arbitre	Arbitro	Arbitro	Arbitro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Understanding	Intelligence	Intelligenza	Inteligencia	Inteligencia
Uneasiness	Inquiétude	Inquietudine	Inquietud	Inquietação
Union	Union; accord	Unione; accordo	Union	União
Urgency	Urgence	Bisogno	Urgencia	Urgencia
Use	Usage	Uso	Uso	Uso
Usefulness	Utilité	Utilità	Utilidad	Utilidade
Utmost	Extrême	Estremo	Extremo	Extremo
Vacancy	Vide	Vacuo	Vacio	Vazio
Value	Valeur	Valore	Valor	Valor
Valve	Valve	Valva	Válvula	Valvula
Vapour	Vapeur	Vapore	Vapor	Vapor
Varnish	Vernis	Vernice	Barniz	Verniz
Vase	Vase	Vaso	Vaso	Vaso
Vault	Voûte	Volta	Bóveda	Abóbada
Vegetable	Légume	Vegetale	Legumbre	Legume
Veil	Voile	Velo	Velo	Véo
Vein	Veine	Vena	Vena	Vêa
Velvet	Velours	Velluto	Terciopelo	Velludo
Vent	Issue	Uscita	Salida	Fresta
Venture	Hasard	Ventura	Ventura	Ventura
Verse	Vers	Verso	Verso	Verso
Vessel (ship)	Vaisseau	Bastimento	Buque	Navio
Vice	Vice	Vizio	Vicio	Vicio
Viceroy	Viceroi	Vicerè	Virey	Vice-rei
Vicinity	Voisinage	Vicinanza	Vecindad	Vizinhança
Victim	Victime	Vittima	Victima	Victima
View	Vue	Vista	Vista	Vista
Village	Village	Villaggio	Aldea	Aldêa
Villain	Scélerat	Scellerato	Bellaco	Villão
Vine	Vigne	Vite	Vid	Videira
Violin	Violon	Violino	Violin	Violino



ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Virgin	Vierge	Vérgine	Virgen	Virgem
Visit	Visite	Visita	Visita	Visita
Visitor	Visiteur	Visitatore	Visitador	Visitador
Voice	Voix	Voce	Voz	Voz
Volume	Volume; tome	Volume	Volumen	Volume
Vote	Vote; suffrage	Voto	Voto	Voto
Voyage	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Viagem
Vulture	Vautour	Avoltojo	Buitre	Abutre
Wadding	Bourre	Stoppaccio	Taco	Buxa
Wafer	Hostie	Ostia	Oblea	Obrêa
Wager	Pari	Scommessa	Apuesta	Aposta
Wages	Gages	Paga	Paga	Paga
Waist	Taille	Vita	Cintura	Cintura
Waistcoat	Gilet	Giubbetto	Chupa	Veste
Waiter	Garçon	Cameriere	Mozo	Moço
Waking	Veille	Veglia	Vela	Vela
Walk	Promenade	Passeggio	Paseo	Passeio
Wall	Mur	Muro	Muro; pared	Muro; parede
Walnut	Noix	Noce	Nuez	Noz
Wand	Bâton	Verga	Vara	Vara
Want	Manque	Mancanza	Falta	Falta
War	Guerre	Guerra	Guerra	Guerra
Warehouse	Magasin	Magazzino	Almacen	Almazem
Warmth	Chaleur	Caldo	Calor	Calor
Warning	Avis	Avviso	Aviso	Aviso
Wash	Lavage	Lavamento	Lavadura	Lavagem
Wasp	Guêpe	Vespa	Avispa	Abelhão
Waste	Gaspillage	Scialacquamento	Despilfarro	Estrago
Watch	Veille; montre	Veglia; orologio	Vela; muestra	Vela; relógio
Watchman	Sentinelte	Guardia	Guarda	Guarda
Water	Eau	Acqua	Agua	Agua

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Wave	Vague	Onda	Onda	Onda
Wax	Cire	Cera	Cera	Cera
Way	Chemin	Cammino	Camino	Caminho
Weakness	Faiblesse	Debolezza	Debilidad	Debilidade
Wealth	Richesse	Ricchezza	Riqueza	Riqueza
Weapon	Arme	Arma	Arma	Arma
Wear	Usage	Uso	Uso	Uso
Weather	Temps	Tempo	Tiempo	Tempo
Web	Toile	Tela	Tela	Têa
Wedding	Mariage	Nozze	Casamiento	Casamento
Wednesday	Mercredi	Mercoledì	Miércoles	Quarta feira
Week	Semaine	Settimana	Semana	Semana
Weight	Poids	Peso	Peso	Peso
Welcome	Bienvenue	Ben venuto	Bien venido	Bem vindo
Well	Source; puits	Pozzo	Pozo	Poço
West	Ouest	Occidente	Occidente	Occidente
Wet	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Whale	Baleine	Balena	Ballena	Balêa
Wharf	Quai	Molo	Muelle	Caes
Wheat	Blé	Grano	Trigo	Trigo
Wheel	Roue	Ruota	Rueda	Roda
Whim	Caprice	Capriccio	Capricho	Capricho
Whip	Fouet	Frusta	Azote	Açoute
Whiskers	Favoris	Favorite	Bigotes	Bigodes
Whistle	Sifflet	Fischio	Silbido	Assobio
White	Blanc	Bianco	Blanco	Branco
Whole	Ensemble	Totale	Total	Total
Wickedness	Méchanceté	Cattiveria	Maldad	Maldade
Widow	Veuve	Védova	Viuda	Viuva
Width	Largeur	Larghezza	Anchura	Largura
Wife	Femme	Moglie	Esposa	Esposa
Wig	Perruque	Parrucca	Peluca	Cabelleira

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Will	Volonté; testament	Volontà; testamento	Voluntad; testamento	Vontade; testamento
Willow	Saulo	Salice	Sauce	Salgueiro
Wind	Vent	Vento	Viento	Vento
Winding	Détour	Sinuosità	Vuelta	Volta
Window	Fenêtre	Finestra	Ventana	Janella
Wine	Vin	Vino	Vino	Vinho
Wing	Aile	Ala	Ala	Ala
Wink	Clin d'œil	Batter d'occhio	Guiño	Piscadella d'olho
Winter	Hiver	Inverno	Invierno	Inverno
Wire	Fil	Filo	Alambre	Arame
Wisdom	Sagesse	Saviezza	Sabiduria	Sabedoria
Wish	Souhait	Desiderio	Deseo	Desejo
Wit	Esprit	Spirito	Ingenio	Ingenho
Witch	Sorcière	Strega	Hechicera	Feiticeira
Witness	Témoin	Testimonio	Testimonio	Testemunho
Woman	Femme	Donna	Mujer	Mulher
Wonder	Étonnement	Maraviglia	Admiracion	Maravilha
Wood	Bois	Legno	Madera	Madeira
Wool	Laine	Lana	Lana	Lãa
Word	Mot	Parola	Palabra	Palavra
Work	Travail	Lavoro	Trabajo	Trabalho
Workman	Ouvrier	Lavorante	Labrador	Trabalhador
World	Monde	Mondo	Mundo	Mundo
Worm	Ver	Verme	Gusano	Gusano
Worship	Culte	Culto	Culto	Culto
Worth	Valeur	Valore	Valor	Valor
Wound	Blessure	Ferita	Herida	Ferida
Wrapper	Enveloppe	Invoglio	Envolvedor	Envoltorio
Wreath	Guirlande	Ghirlanda	Guirnalda	Grinalda
Wreck	Naufrage	Naufragio	Naufragio	Naufragio
Wrestling	Lutte	Lotta	Lucha	Luta
Wretch	Misérable	Miserabile	Miserable	Miseravel

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Wrist	Poignet	Carpo	Muñeca	Munheca
Writing	Écriture	Scrittura	Escritura	Escritura
Wrong	Tort	Torto	Culpa	Semrazaão
Yawn	Bâillement	Sbadiglie	Bostezo	Bocejo
Year	An ; année	Anno	Año	Anno
Yellow	Jaune	Giallo	Amarillo	Amarelo
Yoke	Joug	Giogo	Yugo	Jugo
Youth	Jeunesse	Gioventù	Juventud	Mocidade
Zebra	Zèbre	Zebra	Cebra	Zebra

THE END.